

THE NEW
TESTAMENT
OF OUR
LORD and SAVIOUR
JESUS CHRIST.

Newly Translated out of the
Original Greek.

And with the former Translations
diligently compared and
revised.

By His Majesties special
Commandement.



LONDON,
Printed by the Assignes of John
Bill and Christopher Barker,
Printers to the Kings most
Excellent Majesty. 1547.

¶ Cum Privilegio

¶ THE ORDER OF THE
Books of the New Testament,
with their proper names, and
number of Chapters.

T He Gospel written by Matthew,	28
hath Chapters	
By Mark	16
By Luke	24
By John	21
The Acts of the Apostles	28

The Epistles.

P aul to the Romanes	16
The first to the Corinthians	16
The second to the Corinthians	13
To the Galatians	6
To the Ephesians	6
To the Philippians	4
To the Colossians	4
The first to the Thessalonians	3
The second to the Thessalonians	3
The first to Timothy	6
The second to Timothy	4
To Titus	3
To Philemon	1
The Epistle to the Hebrews	13
The Epistle of James	5
The first Epistle of Peter	5
The second Epistle of Peter	3
The first Epistle of John	5
The second Epistle of John	1
The third Epistle of John	1
The Epistle of Jude	1
The Revelation of John	22

¶ THE

The Gospel according to S. MATTHEVV.

CHAP. I.

The genealogie of Christ : 18 His conception
and birth: 21, 23 His names.

The booke of the * generation of * Luke
Iesus Christ, the son of Da
uid, the son of Abraham.

2 * Abraham begat Isaac,
and * Isaac begat Jacob, and
* Jacob begat Judas and his
brethren.

3 And * Judas begat Pha
res and Zarah of Thamar, and * Phares begat Es
sai, and Essai begat Aham.

4 And Aham begat Aminadab and Aminadab
begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon.

5 And Salmon begat Boos of Rachab, and
Boos begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat Jesse.

6 And * Jesse begat Dauid the king, and * Da
uid the king begat Solomon of her that had been
the wife of Urias.

7 And * Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam
begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

8 And Asa begat Josaphat, and Josaphat begat
Joram, and Joram begat Ozias.

9 And Ozias begat Jotham, and Jotham be
gat Ahas, and Ahas begat Ezechias.

10 And * Ezechias begat Manasses, and Ma
nasses begat Amos, and Amos begat Josias.

11 And * Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren,
about the time they were carryed away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, * Je
chonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Jo
shababel.

5. MATTHEW.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud, and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

14 And Azor begat Sadoc, and Sadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Matthan, and Matthan begat Jacob.

16 And Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David, are fourteen generations: and from David till the carrying away into Babylon, are fourteen generations: and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ, are fourteen generations.

* Luke
1. 37.

18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was thus: when as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph (before they came together) she was found with child of the holy Ghost.

19 When Joseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a publicke example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph thou Son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife, for that which is conceived in her, is of the holy Ghost.

* Luke
1. 31.

21 And she shall bring forth a son, * and thou shalt call his Name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins.

22 (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophets, saying,

* Isaiah
7. 17. &
40. his
Name
shall be
called.

23 * Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and she shall bring forth a son, and she shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted, is, God with us.

24 Then Joseph being raised from sleep, did the angel of the Lord as he bidden him, and took unto him his wife:

25 And knew her not, till she had brought forth her first born Son, and he called his Name Jesus.

C H A P. II.

1 The wisemen come to Christ, 11 and worship him. 14 Joseph fleeth into Egypt.

C H A P. II.

NOW when * Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the dayes of Herod the king beholds here came wise men from the east to Jerusalem,

2 Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews: for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them, where Christ should be born.

5 And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet;

6 * And thou Bethlehem in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a governor, that shall rule my people Israel.

* Micah
5. 2.
John
7. 42.
10.
recd.

7 When Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared:

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child, and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and lo, the star which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was.

10 When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

11 And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.

Or,
offered.

12 And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child, & his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee

S. MATTHEW.

thee word: for Herod will seek the young child
destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young child
his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there until the death of Herod,
it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord
by the prophet, saying, * Out of Egypt have I
led my Son.

* Ose.
11.1.

16 ¶ Then Herod when he saw that he was
ked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and
forth, and slew all the children that were in Be
lehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two
old and under, according to the time which he
diligently enquired of the wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken
* Jeremy the prophet, saying,

* Jer.
31.15.

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamenta
tion, and weeping, and great mourning, Ra
weeping for her children, and would not be
forced, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an
gel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph
Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young child
his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for
are read which sought the young child's life.

21 And he arose, and took the young child,
his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus di
in Judaea in the room of his father Herod, he
afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being
ed of God in a dream, he turned aside into the
of Galilee:

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called
zareth, that it might be fulfilled which was
by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

C H A P. III.

1 John preacheth: 4 His apparel and meat:
baptizeth, 8 The fruits of repentance. 13 Ch
is baptized.

* Mark
1.4.
Mat. 3.1.

I ¶ Those dayes came * John the Baptist, prea
ing in the wilderness of Judaea,

CHAP. III.

2 And saying, Repent ye : for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, * The voice of one crying in the wilderness, prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight. * Isaiah 40. 3. Mark 1. 3.

4 And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins, and his meat was locusts and wilde honey.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan,

6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come ? * Chap. 12. 34.

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance. * Or, 7 answerable to amendment of life.

9 And think not to say within your selves, * We have Abraham to our father : for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. * John 15. 37.

10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees : * therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire. * Chap. 7. 19.

11 * I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance : but he that cometh after me, is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear, he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. * Mark 1. 8. Luk. 3. 16. Joh. 1. 33.

12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner : but will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

13 ¶ Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan, unto John, to be baptized of him. * Mark 1. 9. Luk. 3. 4.

14 But John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me ?

15 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer it to be so now : for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straight.

S. MATTHEW.

thee word: for Herod will seek the young child, and destroy him.

14 When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt:

15 And was there until the death of Herod, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, * Out of Egypt have I led my Son.

* Ose.
11.1.

16 ¶ Then Herod when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he diligently enquired of the wise men.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

* Jer.
31.15.

18 In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young child's life.

21 And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judaea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

C H A P. III.

1 John preacheth: 4 His apparel and meat: 7 He baptizeth, 8 The fruits of repentance. 13 Christ is baptized.

* Mark
1.4.
Mt. 3.1.

In those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

CHAP. III.

2 And saying, Repent ye : for the kingdom of heauen is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying, * The voice of one crying in the wilderness, prepare ye the way of the Lord, ^{* Isaiah 40. 3.} make his paths straight. ^{Mark 1.3.}

4 And the same John had his raiment of camels hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins, and his meat was locusts and wilde honey.

5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan,

6 And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come ? ^{* Chap. 12. 34.}

8 Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance. ^{¶ Or, 7 answers able to amendment of life.}

9 And think not to say within your selves, * We have Abraham to our father : for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. ^{* John 18. 37.}

10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees : * therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ^{* Chap. 7. 19.}

11 * I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance : but he that cometh after me, is mightier then I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear, he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire. ^{* Mark 1. 8. Luk. 3. 16. Joh. 1. 26.}

12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner : but will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.

13 ¶ Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan, unto John, to be baptized of him. ^{* Mark 1. 9.}

14 But John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me ? ^{Luk. 3. 12.}

15 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer it to be so now : for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

16 And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straight.

S. MATTHEW.

straightway out of the water : and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him :
 17 And lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ is tempted, and overcometh : 17 beginneth to preach : 18 calleth some to disciples.

* Mark
 2. 12.
 Luke 4. 1.

Then was * Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted of the devil.

2 And when he had fasted forty dapes and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.

3 And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

* Deut.
 25.

4 But he answered and said, It is written, * Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

5 Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple,

* Psal.
 91. 11.

6 And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thy self down : for it is written, * We will give his angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thy foot dash thy foot against a stone.

* Deut.
 6. 16.

7 Jesus said unto him, It is written again, * Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them,

9 And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

* Deut.
 6. 13.
 & 10. 20.

10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan : for it is written, * Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serve.

* Mark
 1. 24.
 & Luke 4. 14.

11 Then the devil leaveth him, and behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

Job 4. 43.
 Or,
 delivered up.

12 **C** Now when Jesus had heard that John the Baptist was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.

13 And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali.

C H A P. IIII.

the borders of Zabulon and Nephtali:

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Eſaias the prophet, ſaying,

15 * The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephtali, by the way of the ſea beyond Iordan, Galilee of the Gentiles: * Ma. 2.

16 The people which ſat in darkneſſe ſaw great light: and to them which ſat in the region and ſhadow of death, light is ſprung up.

17 * From that time Jeſus began to preach and to ſay, Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand * Mark 1. 1.

18 * And Jeſus walking by the ſea of Galilee, ſaw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, caſſing a net into the ſea, (for they were fiſhers.) * Mark 1. 16.

19 And he ſaith unto them, Follow me: and I will make you fiſhers of men.

22 And they ſtraightway left their nets, and followed him.

21 And going on from thence he ſaw other two brethren, James the ſon of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ſhip with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and he called them.

22 And they immediately left the ſhip, and their father, and followed him.

23 * And Jeſus went about all Galilee, teaching in their ſynagogues, and preaching the goſpel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of ſickneſſes, and all manner of diſeaſe among the people.

24 And his fame went throughout all Syria, and they brought unto him all ſick people that were taken with divers diſeaſes and toments, and thoſe which were poſſeſſed with devils, and thoſe which were lunatick, and thoſe that had the palfie, and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and from Decapolis and from Jeruſalem, and from Judea, and from beyond Jordan.

C H A P. V.

Who are bleſſed. ¶ The apoſtles are the ſalt and light of the world

S. MATTHEW.

AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.

2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them saying,

* Luke 20. 3 * Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

4 Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

* Psal. 37. 11. 5 * Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

6 Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: * for they shall be filled.

* Isaiah 65. 13. 7 Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

* Psal. 24. 4. 8 * Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

9 Blessed are the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.

* 1 Pet. 3. 14. 10 * Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

11 Blessed are ye when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely for my sake.

* 1 Pet. 4. 14. 12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

13 ¶ Ye are the salt of the earth: * but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be trodden out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid.

15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick, and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, * that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

17 ¶ Think not that I am come to destroy the law, and the prophets. I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

18 ¶ Whosoever shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, he shall be called the great in the kingdom of heaven.

19 ¶ Whosoever shall put away from him his member which is one of these, and shall so do, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall put away from him his member which is one of these, and shall so do, he shall be called the great in the kingdom of heaven.

20 ¶ Whosoever shall put away from him his member which is one of these, and shall so do, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall put away from him his member which is one of these, and shall so do, he shall be called the great in the kingdom of heaven.

21 ¶ Whosoever shall put away from him his member which is one of these, and shall so do, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall put away from him his member which is one of these, and shall so do, he shall be called the great in the kingdom of heaven.

22 ¶ Whosoever shall put away from him his member which is one of these, and shall so do, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall put away from him his member which is one of these, and shall so do, he shall be called the great in the kingdom of heaven.

CHAP. V.

18 For verily I say unto you, * Till heaven and earth passe, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise passe from the law, till all be fulfilled. 16. 17.

19 * Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do, and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. James 2. 10.

20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

21 * Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not kill: and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgement. Exod. 20. 13.

22 But I say unto you, that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgement: and whosoever shall say unto his brother Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. Levit. 24. 17.

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee:

24 Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 * Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Luke 12. 57.

26 Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

27 * Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not commit adultery. Exod. 20. 14.

28 But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. Gen. 38. 17. Mark 9. 42.

29 * And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish; and not that

5. MATTHEW.

that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

* Deut. 24. 14.
Luke 26. 18.
1 Cor. 7. 10.
31 It hath been said, * Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement.

32 But I say unto you, that whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

* Exod. 22. 7.
Levit. 29. 12.
Deut. 3. 11.
33 Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, * Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths.

34 But I say unto you, Swear not at all, neither by heaven, for it is Gods throne:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King.

36 Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.

* Jam: 1. 12.
37 * But let your communication be, Yea, yea: Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these, cometh of evil.

* Exod. 21. 24.
Levit. 24. 20.
Deut. 19. 21.
* Luke 6. 29.
Rom. 12. 17.
2 Cor. 6. 7.
* Deut. 19. 8.
* Levit. 19. 28.
* Luke 6. 27.
* Luke 21. 14.
Acts 7. 60.
38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, * An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

39 But, I say unto you, * that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also.

41 And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain.

42 Give to him that asketh thee: and * from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away.

43 Ye have heard that it hath been said, * Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy:

44 But I say unto you, * Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and * pray for them which despitefully use you and persecute you;

45 The pray

CHAP. VI.

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.

46 * For if ye love them which love you, what * Luke reward have ye? Do not even the publicanes the 6. 32.
same?

47 And if ye salute your brethren onely, what do you more then others? Do not even the publicanes so?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

1 Of alms, 3 praying, 1 forgiving. 19 Our treasure. 24 God and mammon.

Take heed that ye do not pour alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.

2 Therefore, * when thou doest thine alms, || Or, with.
* Rom. 12. 8.
|| Or, cause not a trumpet to be sounded. do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

3 But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right doth:

4 That thine alms may be in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily, I say unto you, they have their reward.

6 But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly.

7 But when ye pray, use not vain * repetitions, * * Coloss. 7. 16. as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him.

9 After

S. MATTHEW.

* Luke
11. 2.

9 After this manner therefore pray ye: * Our Fa-
ther which art in heaven, hallowed be thy Name.

10 Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in
earth, as it is in heaven.

11 Give us this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our
debtors.

13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver
us from evil: for thine is the kingdom, and the
power, and the glory, forever. Amen.

* Mark
11. 35.

14 * For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your
heavenly Father will also forgive you.

15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses,
neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 ¶ Whosoever, when ye fast, be not as the hy-
pocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their
faces, that they may appear unto men to fast: Veri-
ly I say unto you, they have their reward.

17 But thou when thou fastest, anoint thine
head, and wash thy face:

18 That thou appear not unto men to fast, but
unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father
which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon
earth, where moth and rust both corrupt, and where
thieves break through, and steal.

* Luke
12. 33.
1 Tim.
6. 19.

20 * But lay up for yourselves treasures in hea-
ven, where neither moth nor rust both corrupt, and
where thieves do not break through, nor steal.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your
heart be also.

* Luke
11. 34.

22 * The light of the body is the eye: if there-
fore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full
of light.

23 But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall
be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is
in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness?

* Luke
16. 13.

* Luke
12. 21.

Psal. 55.

22.

1 Pet. 5. 7.

24 ¶ No man can serve two masters: for ei-
ther he will hate the one, and love the other; or else
he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye
cannot serve God and mammon.

25 Therefore I say unto you, * Take no thought

C H A P. VII.

for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on: is not the life more then meat? and the body then raiment?

26 Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns, yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking: thought can adde one cubit unto his stature?

28 And why take ye thought for raiment? consider the lillies of the field, how they grow: they toil not, neither do they spin:

29 And yet I say unto you, that euen Solomon in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so clothe the grasse of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven: shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drink? or wherewithal shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

33 But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow; for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it self: sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

C H A P. VII.

1 Christ reproveth rash judgement & forbiddeth to cast holy things to dogs. 2 the wide and strait gate.

Iudge not, that ye be judged.

2 For with what iudgement ye iudge, ye shall be judged: * and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.

3 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull

* Luke

6.37.

Rom. 3. 2.

* Mark

4. 24.

Luke 6.

39.

* Luke

6. 41.

S. MATTHEW.

pull out the mote out of thine eye, and behold, beam is in thine own eye?

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye: and then shalt thou see clearly, and cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 Give not that which is holy unto dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine: lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rent you.

7 Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall finde: knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

8 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, shall be opened.

9 Of what man is there of you, whom if he son ask bread, will he give him a stone?

10 Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent?

11 If ye then being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven, give good things to them that ask him?

12 Therefore all things which so ever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets,

13 Enter ye in at the strait gate, for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat:

14 Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

15 Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheeps clothing, but inwardly they are rending wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?

17 Even so, every good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

20 Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven: but he that

* Chap.
21. 23.
Mark 11.
24.
Luk. 11.
John 16.
27.

Jam. 1. 6.

* Luke
6. 58.

* Luke
15. 14.

W. how

* Luke
6. 43.

* Chap.
2. 40.
Rom.
2. 11.
James
1. 22.

CHAP. VIII.

that both the will of my Father which is in Heaven.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name have cast out devils? and in thy Name done many wonderful works.

23 And then will I professe unto them, * I never * Luke 16. 27.
knew you, * depart from me ye that work iniquity. * Psalm 6. 8.

24 ¶ Therefore, * whosoever keepeth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: * Luke 6. 47.

25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell not, for it was founded upon a rock.

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand:

27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house: and it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to passe when Jesus had ended these sayings, * the people were astonished at his doctrine. * Mark 1. 22.

29 For he taught them as one having authority and not as the scribes. Luk. 4. 32.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ cleanseth the leper. 18 The devil driven out of the possessed, 21 go into the swine

When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

2 * And behold, there came a leper, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. * Mark 1. 40. Luk. 5. 12.

3 And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will be thou clean. And immediately his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man, but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer the gift that * Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. * Levit. 24. 4.

5 ¶ * And when Jesus was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, * Luk. 7.

6 And saying, Lord my servant lieth at home sick

S. MATTHEW.

sick of the palseie, grievously tormented.

7 And Jesus saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

8 The centurion answered & said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldst come under my roof: but speak the word onely, and my servant shall be healed.

9 For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this man, Go, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he cometh, and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

10 When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham and Isaac, and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven.

12 But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darknesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast beleev'd, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self same hour.

14 ¶ And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wives mother laid, & sick of a fever.

15 And he touched her hand, and the fever left her, and she arose and ministered unto them.

16 ¶ When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed them that were sick.

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, * Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.

18 ¶ Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave commandment to depart into the other side.

19 ¶ And a certain scribe came and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou go.

20 And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests: but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his disciples said unto him,

* Mark

1. 29.

Luke

4. 38.

* Mark

1. 31.

Luke

4. 40.

* Isaiah

53. 4.

1 Pet.

2. 24.

* Luke

9. 57.

C H A P. IX.

Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

22 But Jesus said unto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.

23 And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him.

24 * And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep. * Mark 4.37. Luke 8.23.

25 And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord save us: we perish.

26 And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? then he arose and rebuked the winds, and the sea, and there was a great calm.

27 But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, who even the winds & the sea obey him?

28 * And when he was come to the other side, into the countrey of the Gergesens, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might passe by way. * Mark 5.1. Luke 8.25.

29 And behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

30 And there was a good way off from them, a herd of many swine feeding.

31 So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said unto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them, fled, and went their wayes into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

34 And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus; and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

C H A P. IX.

1 Christ cureth the palsie, & he calleth Matthew, & eateth with publicans and sinners.

AND he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into his own city. * Mark 2.2. Luke 5.18.

2 * And behold, they brought to him a man sick of

S. MATTHEW.

of the palse, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing the faith, said unto the sick of the palse, Son, be of good cheer, thy sins be forgiven thee.

3 And behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said, Wherefore thinke ye evil in your heart?

5 For whether is it easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee: or to say, Arise and walk?

6 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins. (Then saith he to the sick of the palse,) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house.

7 And he arose, and departed to his house.

8 But when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

9 ¶ And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose and followed him.

10 ¶ And it came to passe as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicanes and sinners came, and sat down with him and his disciples.

11 And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your master with publicanes and sinners?

12 But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They that be whole, need not a physician, but they that are sick.

13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, & not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

14 ¶ Then came to him the disciples of John saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

15 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them: but the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, & then shall they fast.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment: so that which is put in to fill it up, is

* Mark
2.14.
Luke
5.27.

* Hos. 6.6
Chs. 12.7
* 1 Tim.
1.17.

* Mark
2.18.
Luke
5.33.

draw,
or, un-
wrought
cloth

C H A P. I X.

keeth from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

18 ¶ While he spake these things unto them, * Mark
behold, there came a certain ruler, and worshipped 5. 22.
him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but Luke
come and lay thine hand upon her, and she shall live. 2. 41.

19 And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

20 ¶ (And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the hem of his garment.

21 For she said within her self, If I may but touch his garment, I shall be whole.

22 But Jesus turned him about, and when he saw her, he said, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that hour.)

23 And when Jesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels & the people making a noise,

24 He said unto them, Give place, for the maid is not dead, but she sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And he the same hereof went abroad into all that land. Or, this same,

27 ¶ And when Jesus departed thence, two blinde men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou Son of David have mercy on us.

28 And when he was come into the house, the blinde men came to him and Jesus saith unto them, Beleeve ye that I am able to do this: they said unto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you.

30 And their eyes were opened: and Jesus straightly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ * As they went out, behold, they brought to * Luke
12. 14.

S. MATTHEW.

him a dumb man possessed with a devil.

33 And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake, and the multitudes marvelled, saying, I was never so seen in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, * He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils.

35 * And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

36 ¶ * But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, * as sheep having no shepherd.

37 Then saith he unto his disciples, * The harvest is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

C H A P. X.

1 The apostles are sent to do miracles, & to teach

* **A**ND * when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power * against unclean spirits to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease.

2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these the first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother :

3 Philip and Bartholomew, Thomas an Arabian, and Matthew the publicane, James the son of Alphaeus, and Lebbaeus, whose surname was Thaddaeus

4 Simon the Cananite, and Judas Iscariot who also betrayed him :

5 These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritanes enter ye not :

6 * But go, rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, * The kingdom of heaven is at hand :

8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils : for every one that will receive you, shall receive you.

* Chip.
12.24.
Mar. 3.32
Luke
11.13.
* Mark
6.6.
Luke.
11.13.
* Mark
9.34.
were
sired and
lay down
* Numb.
27.17.
* Luke
10.2.

* Mark
3.15.
Luke 9.1.
over

* Acts
13.46.
* Luke
10.9.

CHAP. X.

- 9 * ¶ **Prob** be neither gold, nor silver, nor brasse
in your purses :
- 10 **Nez** scrip for your journey, neither two coats,
neither shoes, nor yet staves : (* for the workman
is worthy of his meat.)
- 11 * And into whatsoever city or town ye shall
enter, enquire who in it is worthy : and there abide,
till ye go thence.
- 12 And when ye come into an house, salute it.
- 13 And if the house be worthy, let your peace
come upon it : but if it be not worthy, let your peace
return to you.
- 14 * And whosoever shall not receive you, nor
hear your words : when ye depart out of that house
or city, * shake off the dust of your feet.
- 15 **Meris** I say unto you, It shall be more toler-
able for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the
day of judgement, then for that city.
- 16 ¶ **Behold**, I send you forth as sheep in the
midst of wolves : be ye therefore wise as serpents,
and ¶ harmlesse as doves.
- 17 But beware of men : for they will deliver you
up to the counsels, and they will scourge you in their
synagogues :
- 18 And ye shall be brought before gobernors and
kings for my sake, for a testimony against them, and
the Gentiles.
- 19 * But when they deliver you up, take no
thought, how or what ye shall speak ; for it shall be
given you in that same hour what ye shall speak.
- 20 For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of
your Father which speaketh in you.
- 21 * And the brother shall deliver up the brother to
death, and the father the child : and the children
shall rise up against their parents, and cause them
to be put to death.
- 22 And ye shall be hated of all men : for my Names
sake : * but he that endureth to the end, shall be saved.
- 23 But when they persecute you in this city, flee
ye into another : for verily I say unto you, Ye shall
not ¶ have gone over the cities of Israel, till the
Son of man be come.

* Mark
6. 8.
Luke 9. 3.
& 21. 34.
10. 4.
* 1 Tim.
5. 18.
Luk. 10. 7.
* Luke
10. 8.

* Mark
6. 11.

* Act.
13. 51.

* Luke
10. 3.

10.
simple.

* Mark
13. 11.
Luke
12. 11.

* Luke
21. 16.

* Mark
13. 13.

10. end.
or, finish.

S. MATTHEW.

* Luke
6. 40.
John
13. 16.

24 * The disciple is not above his master, ne
the servant above his lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple that he be as his
master, and the servant as his lord : if they have
called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much
more shall they call them of his household ?

* Mark
4. 21.
Luk. 8. 17
and 12. 3.

26 Fear them not therefore : * for there is na
thing covered, that shall not be revealed ; and hid
that shall not be known.

27 What I tell you in darknesse, that speak
in light : and what ye hear in the ear, that preach
ye upon the house tops.

* Luke
12. 4.
It is in
value
halfpenny
farthing
in the o-
iginal :
not being
the tenth
part of
the Ro-
man penny

28 * And fear not them which kill the body, but
are not able to kill the soul : but rather fear him
which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

29 Are not two sparrows sold for a || farthing,
and one of them shall not fall on the ground without
your Father.

30 * But y^e very hairs of your head are all numbered.

31 Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than
many sparrows.

* 2 Sam
14. 11.
Acts 27.

32 * Whosoever therefore shall confesse me be-
fore men, him will I confesse also before my Father
which is in heaven.

33 * Luke
12. 8.

33 * But whosoever shall deny me before men, him
will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

* Mark
8. 38.

34 Think not that I am come to send peace on
earth : I came not to send peace, but a sword.

Luk 9. 36.
1 Tim.
2. 12.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance * against
his father and the daughter against her mother, and
the daughter in law against her mother in law.

* Luke
12. 51.

36 And a mans foes shall be they of his own
household.

* Luke
14. 21.

37 * He that loveth father or mother more than
me, is not worthy of me : and he that loveth son or
daughter more than me, is not worthy of me.

* Chap.
16. 24.
Luk 9. 23.
Mark 8.

38 * And he that taketh not his crosse, and fol-
loweth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 * John
12. 26.

39 * He that findeth his life, shall lose it : and
he that loseth his life for my sake, shall finde it.

* Luke
12. 16.
John 13.

40 * He that receiveth you, receiveth me : and
he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

27.

CHAP. XI.

41 He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophets reward: and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

42 * And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward. * Mark 9.41.

CHAP. XI.

John sendeth to Christ, 7 Christs answer.

AND it came to passe when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach & to preach in their cities.

2 * Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, * Luke 7.18.

3 And said unto him, Art thou he that should come? or do we look for another?

4 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye, & shew John again those things which ye hear and see:

5 * The blinde receive their sight, and the lame walk, the sepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and * the poore have the gospel preached to them. * Isaiah 35.6. * Isaiah 61.1.

6 And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me.

7 And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the winde?

8 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more then a prophet.

10 For this is he of whom it is written, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee. * Mal. 3.1.

11 Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater then John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven, is greater then he.

S. MATTHEW.

* Luke
15. 16.
Or, is
gotten
by force,
and they
that
thrust
men.
* Mal. 4.
5.
* Luke
9. 31.

12 * And from the dayes of Iohn the Baptist
until now, the kingdom of heauen suffereth vio-
lence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the prophets, and the law prophesie
until Iohn.

14 And if ye will receive it, this is * Elias which
was for to come.

15 He that eares to hear, let him hear.

16 ¶ * But whereunto shall I liken this gen-
eration? It is like unto children sitting in the mar-
kets, and calling unto their fellows,

17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye
have not danced: we have mourned unto you, and
ye have not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking
and they say, he hath a devil.

19 The Son of man came eating and drinking
and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a wine-
bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners: but
wisdom is justified of her children.

* Luke
10. 13.

20 ¶ * Then began he to upbraid the citie
wherem most of his mighty works were done, be-
cause they repented not.

21 Wo unto thee Chorazin, wo unto thee Beth-
saida: for if the mighty works which were done
in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would
have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

22 But I say unto you, It shall be more toler-
able for Tyre and Sidon at the day of iudgement
then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted
unto heauen, shalt be brought down to hell: for if
thy mighty works which have been done in thee, had
been done in Sodom, it would have remained until
this day.

24 But I say unto you, that it shall be more
tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of iudg-
ment, then for thee.

* Luke
10. 21.

25 ¶ * At that time Iesus answered, and said,
I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heauen and earth,
because thou hast hid these things from the wise
and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.

26 Even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 * All things are delivered unto me of my Father, and no man knoweth the Son but the Father: * neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him.

* John
3.35.
* John
6.45.

28 Come unto me, all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, for I am meek and lowly in heart: * and ye shall find rest unto your souls.

* Jer.
6.16.
* 1 Chr.
2.3.

30 * For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

CHAP. XII.

2 The disciples pluck the ears of corn on the sabbath. 31 Blasphemy against the holy Ghost

At that time * Jesus went on the sabbath-day through the corn, and his disciples were hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat.

* Mark
3.23.
Luke. 6.1
Deut.
23.15.

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawfull to do upon the sabbath-day.

3 But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did when he was an hungred, and they that were with him,

* 1 Sam.
21.6.

4 How he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawfull for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, * but onely for the priests?

5 Or have ye not read in the * law, how that on the sabbath-dayes the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blamelesse?

* Exod.
29.37.
Lev. 24.9
and, 24.9.
* Num.
28.9.
* Ose.
6.7.

6 But I say unto you, that in this place is one greater then the temple.

7 But if ye had known what this meaneth, * I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltlesse.

Lev. 24.9.

8 For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day.

9 * And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue.

* Matt
9.35

S. MATTHEW.

10 ¶ And behold, there was a man which had his hand withered, and they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath dayes? that they might accuse him.

11 And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep: and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

12 Now much then is a man better then a sheep: therefore it is lawfull to do well on the sabbath dayes.

13 Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand: and he stretched it forth, and it was restored whole, like as the other.

He took
councell.

14 ¶ Then the Pharisees went out, and he held a councell against him, how they might destroy him.

15 But when Jesus knew it, he withdrew himself from thence; and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all,

16 And charged them that they should not make him known:

* E. say
62. l.

17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Elisha the prophet, saying,

18 * Behold my servant whom I have chosen, my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgement to the Gentiles.

19 He shall not strive, nor cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.

20 A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgement unto victory.

21 And in his Name shall the Gentiles trust.

* Luke
9. 14-1

22 ¶ Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blinde and dumb: and he healed him, inasmuch that the blinde and dumb both spake and saw.

23 And all the people were amazed, and said, Is this the son of David?

* chap.
9. 34

24 * But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

CHAP. XII.

25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against it self is brought to desolation : and every city or house divided against it self shall not stand.

26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself ; how shall then his kingdom stand ?

27 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out ? therefore they shall be your Judges.

28 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you.

29 Or else, how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man, and then he will spoil his house ?

30 He that is not with me, is against me : and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

31 Wherefore I say unto you, * All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men : but the blasphemy against the holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.

* Mark
3.8.
Luke
12.10.
1 John
5.16.

32 And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him : but whosoever speaketh against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good : or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt : for the tree is known by his fruit.

34 O generation of serpents, how can ye, being evil, speak good things ? * for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

* Luke
6.45.

35 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart, bringeth forth good things : and an evil man out of the evil treasure, bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgement.

37 For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

* Chap.
18.1.
Luke
11.29.
1 Cor.
13.2.

38 * Then certain of the scribes, and of the Pharisees, answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

S. MATTHEW.

39 But he answered, and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas.

* *Jonah*
1.17. 40 * For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Son of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.

* *Jonah*
3.5. 41 The men of Nineve shall rise in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

* *1 King.*
10.1. 42 * The queen of the south shall rise up in judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and behold, greater then Solomon is here.

* *Luke*
11.24. 43 * When the unclean spirit is gone out of man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out: and when he is come, findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.

* *Heb.*
6.4. &
10.25. 45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in, and dwell there: * and the last state of that man is worse then the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

* *2 Pet.*
2.20. 46 * While he yet talked to the people, * behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

* *Mark*
3.21. 47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

* *Luke*
8.20. 48 But he answered, and said unto him that said this unto him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

C H A P. XIII.

3 Of the sower and the seed. 24 Divers other parables. 34 Why Christ spake in parables.

The same day went Jesus out of the house,* and sat by the sea side. * Mark 4:1.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, * Behold, a sower went forth to sow, * Luke 8:5.

4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the wayes side, and the fowls came and devoured them up.

5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepnesse of earth.

6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched: and because they had not root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns: and the thorns springing up and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundred fold, some sixty fold, some thirty fold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 * For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away, even that he hath. * Chap. 25:29.

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. * Isa. 6, 7. Mark 4. 12.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, as which saith, * By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand: and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive. Luk. 8:10 John 13. 40. Acts 28. 26. Rom. 11. 8.

15 For this peoples heart is waxen grosse, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have

3. MATTHEW.

have closed, lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.

* Luke
10. 24.

17 For verily I say unto you, * that many prophets, and righteous men have desired to see the things which ye see, and have not seen them: and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart, this is he which receiveth seed by the wayside.

20 But he that receiveth the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and receiveth it with joy; but he hath no root, and he becometh unfruitful.

21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution cometh because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that receiveth seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But he that receiveth seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundred fold, some sixty, some thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came, and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, dost thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this.

C H A P. XIII.

The servants said unto him, **W**ilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he said, **N**ay: lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest, I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 **A**nother parable put he forth unto them, saying, * The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took and sowed in his field. * Mark. 4.30. Luke 13.19.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree: so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 **A**nother parable spake he unto them, The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened. * Luke. 13.20. † The word in the Greek is a measure containing about a peck and an half, wanting little more than a pint. * Mark. 4.22. * Psal. 72.2.

34 **A**ll these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not unto them:

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, * I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered, and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the Son of man.

38 The field is the world: the good seed, are the children of the kingdom: but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

39 The enemy that sowed them, is the devil: the harvest is the end of the world: and the reapers, are the angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire: so shall it be in the end of this world.

S. MATTHEW.

Or,
scandals.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity:

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

* Dan.
12.3.

43 * Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hears to hear, let him hear.

44 ¶ Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man has found, he hideth, and for joy thereof, goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls:

46 Who when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, & bought that.

47 ¶ Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind.

48 Which when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just.

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he unto them, Therefore the scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

* Mark
8.1.
Luke
4.16.

54 And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence has this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

* John,
6.42.

55 * Is not this the carpenters son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James

C H A P. XIII.

and Ioses, and Simon, and Judas :

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us ?
whence then hath this man all these things ?

57 And they were offended in him. But Jesus ^{* Mark 6.4.}
said unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, ^{luk. 4. 24}
save in his own countrey, and in his own house. ^{john. 4. 44}

51 And he did not many mighty works there,
because of their unbelief.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Herods opinion of Christ. 3 John Bapt. st be-
headed. 15 Five loaves and two fishes.

AT that time * Herod the tetrach heard of the
fame of Jesus,

2 And said unto his servants, This is John the ^{* Mark 6.14.}
Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore ^{Luk. 9. 7.}
mighty works || do shew forth themselves in him.

3 **E*** For Herod had laid hold on John, and ^{1 Or, are}
bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake ^{wrought}
his brother Philips wife. ^{by him.}

4 For John said unto him, * It is not lawful ^{* Luke 2. 19.}
for thee to have her. ^{Lev. 18.}

5 And when he would have put him to death, he ^{15. and}
feared the multitude, * because they counted him as ^{20. 31.}
a prophet. ^{* Chap. 21. 26.}

6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the
daughter of Herodias danced before them, and
pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath to give
her whatsoever she would ask.

8 And she being before instructed of her mother,
said, Give me here John Baptists head in a
charger.

9 And the king was sorry : nevertheless for the
oaths sake, and them which sat with him at meat,
he commanded it to be given her.

10 And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and
given to the damsel : & she brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came and took up the body,
and buried it. and went and told Jesus.

13 **E*** When Jesus heard of it, he departed ^{* Mark 6. 32.}
thence by ship, into a desert place apart : and when ^{Luke 9.}
the ^{10.}

S. MATTHEW.

the people had heard thereof, they followed him foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

* John
6.5.
Mark 6.
35.

15 ¶ And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat.

17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled; and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten, were about six thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

* Mark
6.46.
* John
6.16.

23 ¶ And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone.

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit, and they cried out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer: it is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him, and said, Lord, if be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

CHAP. XV.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the winde || boisterous, he was afraid: and beginning to sink, he cryed, saying, 10-
Atong. Lord, save me.

31 And immediatly Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

34 ¶ And when they were gone over, they came * Mark
6:52 into the land of Genesaret.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased,

36 And besought him, that they might onely touch the hem of his garment; and as many as touched, were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 Gods comma dinents and mens traditions 11
What defileth a man, and what not.

Then * came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, * Mark.
7:1. which were of Ierusalem, saying,

2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgresse the commandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, * Honor thy * Exod.
22.12.
deut. 5.16 father and mother: And * he that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. * Exod.
21.17.
Levit.
20.9.
Prov.

5 But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, * It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me,

6 And honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the command- 20.20.
* Mark.
7.11,12. mens

S M A T T H E W.

ment of God of none effect by your tradition.

7 Ye hypocrites, well did **Isaias** prophesse you, saying,

* **Isaias.**
19. 14.

8 * This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: in their heart is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching doctrines the commandments of men.

* **Mark**
7. 14.

10 ¶ And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth, defileth a man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him Knowest thou that the **Pharisees** were offended after they heard this saying?

* **John.**
15. 2.

13 But he answered, and said, * Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

* **Mark**
7. 17.

14 Let them alone: * they be blinde leaders, the blinde. And if the blinde lead the blinde, they shall fall into the ditch.

* **Luke.**
6. 39.

15 * Then answered Peter, and said unto him Declare unto us this parable.

16 And **Jesus** said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

17 Do ye not yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

* **Gen.**
6. 5. and
8. 11.

19 * For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies.

20 These are the things which defile a man. But to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.

* **Mark**
7. 24.

21 ¶ Then **Jesus** went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy

C H A P. X V.

mercy on me, O Lord, thou Son of David, my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after us.

24 But he answered and said, * I am not sent, * Chap. 10.6. but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

25 Then came she, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

26 But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.

27 And he said, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

29 * And Jesus departed from thence, and came * Mark. 7.31. nigh unto the sea of Galilee, and went up unto a mountain, and sat down there.

30 * And great multitudes came unto him, ha- * Isaiah 35.5. ving with them those that were lame, blinde, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus feet, and he healed them.

31 Inasmuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 * Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, * Mark. 8.1. and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three dayes, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way.

33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Jesus said unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, & a few little fishes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples:

S. MATTHEW.

disciples; and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven barrels full.

38 And they that did eat, were four thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

C H A P. XVI.

4 The signe of Iohn: 5 The leaven of the Pharisees and Sadduces: 11 Christ foresheweth his death.

* Mark.
9. 14.
Luke.
12. 54.

The * Pharisees also with the Sadduces came and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a signe from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the sky is red.

3 And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, but can ye not discern the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given unto it, but the signe of the prophet Iohnas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadduces.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread?

* Chap.
14. 17.

9 * Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

* Chap.
15. 34.

10 * Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

11 How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should

between
Sabbath
12
not
circum
13
sarea
* 22
14
the
one of
15
am
16
art
17
sed a
bath
is in
18
ter,
the g
19
king
on ca
halt
20
Houl
21
unto
lem,
prie
gain
22
him.
not b
23
behin
thou
those
24
any
behin

CHAP. XVI.

beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?

12 **T**hen understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread: but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.

13 **W**hen Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, * Whom do men say that I, the Son of man, am? * Mark 8.27.

14 And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist: some Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets. Luke 9.18.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered and said, * Thou art Christ the Son of the living God. * John 6.69.

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.

18 And I say also unto thee, that * thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. * John 1.42.

19 * And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. * John 20.23.

20 Then charged he his disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

21 **F**rom that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

23 But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me Satan, thou art an offence unto me: for thou savorest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. * Chap. 10.28.

24 * Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, Mark 8.34.

5. MATTHEW.

self, and take up his crosse, and follow me.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it, and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall save it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

* Psalm.

61.12.

Rom. 2.6

* Mark

9.1.

Luke 9.

27.

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels: * And then he will reward every man according to his works.

28 Verily I say unto you, * There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

CHAP. XVII.

I The transfiguration of Christ. 14 He healed the lunatick, 22 foretelleth his passion, 24 receiveth tribute.

* Mark

9.2.

Luke 9.

28.

AND * after six dayes, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart,

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles: one for thee, one for Moses, and one for Elias.

* 2 Pet.

1.17.

5 * While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased: hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid,

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision

CHAP. XVII.

man, untill the Son of man be risen again from the dead. * Chap. 11. 14.

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, * Why then say the Scribes that Elias must first come? mar. 9. 11

11 And Jesus answered, and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things:

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John Baptist.

17 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying, * Mark 9. 17. Luke 9. 38.

15 Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunatic, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered, and said, O faithlesse and peruerse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devill, and he departed out of him, and the childe was cured from that very hour.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, * Luke 17. 6. If ye have faith as a grain of mustards seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place: and it shall remove, and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

21 Howbeit, this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting. * Chap. 20. 17. Mark 9. 21. Luke 9. 44.

22 ¶ And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men.

23 And they shall kill him, & the third day he shall be raised again: and they were exceeding sorry.

24 ¶ And

S. MATTHEW.

I^c Called
in the
original
Did-
rachma,
being in
value
fifteen
pence.
For, a
Rater. It
is half
an ounce
of silver
in value
two shil-
lings six-
pence, af-
ter five
shillings
the ounce

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received || tribute-money, came to Peter and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custome or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend thee, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up a fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde || a piece of money: take, and give to them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

¶ Christ teacheth to be humble. 7 Touching sentence, 15 and forgiving one another.

At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

2 And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, * Except he be converted, and become as little children, he shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my Name, receiveth me.

6 * But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which beleve in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

7 ¶ Woe unto the world because of offences: it must needs be that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh.

8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed

* Mark
9.33.
Luke
9.46.

* Chap.
19. 4.
1 Cor.
14.20.

* Mark
9.43.
Luk. 17.
1.2.

1 Chap.
5.30.
Mark
9.45.

CHAP. XVIII.

rather then having two hands or two feet, so be cast into everlasting fire.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

11 * For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. Luke 19.10.

12 * Now think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, woth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? Luke 15.4.

13 And if so be that he finde it, verily I say unto you, he rejoyceth more of that sheep, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, y^e one of these little ones should perish.

15 ¶ Moreover, * if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. Levit. 19.17. Luk. 17.3.

16 But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in * the mouth of two or three witnesses, every word may be established. Deut. 19.15.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an * heathen man, and a publican. John 8. 17. 2 Cor. 12.14. Heb 10. 22.

18 Verily I say unto you, * Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. 1 Cor. 5.9. 2 Thes. 2.14.

19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. John 20.23. 1 Cor. 5.4.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how

S. MATT EW.

how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? * till seven times?

* Luke
17.4.

22 Iesu: saith unto him, I say not unto thee, till seven times: but, untill seventy times seven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one brought unto him which ought him ten thousand

[A talent || talents.

is 750.
ounces of
silver.
which af-
ter five
shillings
the ounce
is 137.1.
10.5.
|| Or, be-
sought
him.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which ought him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

[The
Roman
penny is
the eight
part of
an
ounce,
which
after five
shillings
the ounce
is 7.d.
ob.

29 And his fellow servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow servants saw what he had done, they were very sorry, and came and told their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgive thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do

CHAP. XIX.

unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

Christ healeth the sick. 3 and 7 Touching divorce. ext. 16 How to attain eternal life.

As it came to passe, * that when Iesus had finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Iudaea beyond Jordan: 2 And great multitudes followed him, and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, * that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female?

5 And said, * For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh.

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

7 They say unto him, * Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

8 He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives, but from the beginning it was not so.

9 * And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: & whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery.

10 ¶ His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mothers womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heavens sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

S. MATTHEW.

39 But he answered, and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given to it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas.

* Jonah
1. 17. 40 * For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly: so shall the Son of man be three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.

* Jonah
3. 5. 41 The men of Nineve shall rise in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

* 1 King.
10. 1. 42 * The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

* Luke
11. 24. 43 * When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out: and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished.

* Heb.
4. 4. &
10. 35. 45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in, and dwell there: * and the last state of that man is worse then the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

* Pet.
2. 20. 46 * While he yet talked to the people, * he hold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.

* Mark
3. 21. 47 Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee.

* Luke
8. 20. 48 But he answered, and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hands toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother, and my brethren.

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

C H A P. XIII.

3 Of the sower and the seed. 24 Divers other parables. 34 Why Christ spake in parables.

The same day went Jesus out of the house,* and * Mark 4:1.
sat by the sea side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, * Behold, a sower went forth to sow, * Luke 8:5.

4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the wayes side, and the fowls came and devoured them up.

5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepnesse of earth.

6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched: and because they had not root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns: and the thorns sprung up and choked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundred fold, some sixty fold, some thirty fold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 * For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, * Chap. 25:29.
and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away, even that he hath.

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not: and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. * Isa. 6, 7, Mark 4, 12.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith, * By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand: and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive. Luk. 8:10 John 12:40. Acts 28:26. Rom. 11:8.

15 For this peoples heart is waxed grosse, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have

3. MATTHEW.

have closed, lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.

* Luke
10. 34.

17 For verily I say unto you, * that many prophets, and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them: and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart, this is he which receiveth seed by the way side.

20 But he that receiveth the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it.

21 Yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He also that receiveth seed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But he that receiveth seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundred fold, some sixty, some thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came, and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, dost not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this.

The

C H A P. XIII.

The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up ?

29 But he said, Nay : lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harvest : and in the time of harvest, I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and binde them in bundles to burn them : but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, * The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man sowed in his field. * Mark. 4. 30. Luke 13. 18.

32 Which indeed is the least of all seeds : but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree : so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 ¶ * Another parable spake he unto them, The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three [†] measures of meal, till the whole was leavened. * Luke. 13. 20. [†] The word in the Greek is a measure containing about a peck and an half, wanting little more than a pint. * Mark. 4. 21. * Psal. 72. 2.

34 * All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not unto them :

35 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, * I will open my mouth in parables, I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house : and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered, and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the Son of man.

38 The field is the world : the good seed, are the children of the kingdom : but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

39 The enemy that soweth them, is the devil : the harvest is the end of the world : and the reapers, are the angels.

40 As therefore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire : so shall it be in the end of this world.

S. MATTHEW.

107.
scandals.

41 The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity:

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

* Dan.
12.3.

43 * Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

44 ¶ Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field: the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof, goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls:

46 Who when he had found one pearl of great price, he went and sold all that he had, & bought it.

47 ¶ Again the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kinde.

48 Which when it was full they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just,

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire, there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

51 Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord.

52 Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe which is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to passe, that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

54 And when he was come into his own country, he taught them in their synagoge, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

55 * Is not this the carpenters son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James,

* Mark
6.1.
Luke
4.16.

* John,
4.46.

an

C H A P. XIII.

and Ioseph, and Simon, and Iudas ?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with us ? whence then hath this man all these things ?

57 And they were offended in him. But Iesus ^{* Mark 6.4. Luk. 4.24 Joh. 4.46} said unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, save in his own countrey, and in his own house.

58 And he did not many mighty works there, because of their unbelief.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Herods opinion of Christ. 3 John Bapt' st beheaded. 15 Five loaves and two fishes.

At that time * Herod the tetrarch heard of the same of Iesus,

2 And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist, he is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him. ^{* Mark 6.14. Luk. 9.7.}

3 * For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake his brother Philipps wife. ^{10, are wrought by him. * Luke 2.19.}

4 For John said unto him, * It is not lawful for thee to have her. ^{* Lev. 18. 16. and 20.21.}

5 And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, * because they counted him as a prophet. ^{* Chap. 21.26.}

6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon he promised with an oath to give her whatsoever she would ask.

8 And she being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here John Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the king was sorry : nevertheless for the oaths sake, and them which sat with him at meat, he commanded it to be given her.

10 And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.

11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel : & she brought it to her mother.

12 And his disciples came and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Iesus. ^{* Mark 6.32. Luke 9.10, 11}

13 * When Iesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship, into a desert place apart : and when

S. MATTHEW.

the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foot out of the cities.

14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their sick.

* John

6.5.

Mark 6.

25.

15 ¶ And when it was evening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart, give ye them to eat.

17 And they say unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, and took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake, and gave the loaves to his disciples, and the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eat, and were filled; and they took up of the fragments that remained, twelve baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten, were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

* Mark

6.46.

* John

6.16.

23 ¶ And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone:

24 But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Jesus went unto them walking on the sea.

26 And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit: and they cried out for fear.

27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer: it is I, be not afraid.

28 And Peter answered him, and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

29 And

CHAP. XV.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come upon out of the ship, he walked on the water to go to Jesus.

30 But when he saw the winde || boisterous, he ^{10r.} was afraid: and beginning to sink, he cryed, saying, ^{Along.} Lord, save me.

31 And immediatly Jesus stretcheth forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the winde ceased.

33 Then they that were in the ship, came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

34 ¶ And when they were gone over, they came ^{* Mark 6:32} into the land of Genesaret.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought unto him all that were diseased,

36 And besought him, that they might onely touch the hem of his garment; and as many as touched, were made perfectly whole.

CHAP. XV.

3 Gods comma dinents and mens traditions 11
What defileth a man, and what not.

Then ^{* Mark 7:1} came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying,

2 Why do thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgresse the commandment of God by your tradition?

4 For God commanded, saying, ^{* Exod. 20:12} Honor thy father and mother: And ^{deut. 5:16} he that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

5 But ye say, ^{* Exod. 21:17.} Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, ^{Levit. 20:9.} It is a gift by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me, ^{Prov.}

6 And honor not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment ^{* Mark 7:11, 13}

S. MATTHEW.

ment of God of none effect by your tradition.

7 Ye hypocrites, well did **Isaias** prophesse of you, saying,

* **Isaias.**
19. 14.

8 * This people hateth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips: but their heart is far from me.

9 But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

* **Mark**
7. 14.

10 ¶ And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth, defileth a man: but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the **Pharisees** were offended after they heard this saying?

* **John.**
15. 2.

13 But he answered, and said, * Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up.

* **Mark**
7. 17.

14 Let them alone: * they be blinde leaders of the blinde. And if the blinde lead the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch.

* **Luke.**
6. 39.

15 * Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable.

16 And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding?

17 Do ye not yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

18 But those things which proceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

* **Gen.**
6. 5. and
8. 11.

19 * For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies.

20 These are the things which defile a man. But to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.

* **Mark**
7. 24.

21 ¶ Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy

C H A P. X V.

mercy on me, O Lord, thou Son of David, my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after us.

24 But he answered and said, * I am not sent, * Chap. 10.6. but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

25 Then came she, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, help me.

26 But he answered and said, It is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it to dogs.

27 And she said, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

29 * And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee, and went up unto a mountain, and sat down there. * Mark. 7.31.

30 * And great multitudes came unto him, having with them those that were lame, blinde, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus feet, and he healed them. * Isaiah 35.5.

31 Inasmuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blinde to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 * Then Jesus called his disciples unto him, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three dayes, and have nothing to eat: and I will not send them away fasting, lest they faint in the way. * Mark. 8.1.

33 And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so great a multitude?

34 And Jesus said unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, & a few little fishes.

35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake them, and gave to his disciples:

S. MATTHEW.

disciples; and the disciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets full.

38 And they that did eat, were four thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

C H A P. XVI.

4 The signe of Iona: s. 6 The leaven of the Pharisees and Sadduces: 11 Christ foresheweth his death.

* Mark,
8. 11.
Luke,
12. 54.

The Pharisees also with the Sadduces came, and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a signe from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the skie is red.

3 And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the skie is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the skie, but can ye not discern the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be given unto it, but the signe of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadduces.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among your selves, because ye have brought no bread?

* Chap.
14. 17.

9 Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

* Chap.
15. 34.

10 Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

11 How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake it not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware

CHAP. XVI.

beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees?

12 **Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread: but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadducees.**

13 **When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, * Whom do men say that I, the Son of man, am?** * Mark 8. 27.

14 **And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist: some Elias, and others Jeremias, or one of the prophets.** Luke 9. 18.

15 **He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?**

16 **And Simon Peter answered and said, * Thou art Christ the Son of the living God.** * John 6. 69.

17 **And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bariona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven.**

18 **And I say also unto thee, that * thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.** * John 1. 42.

19 *** And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.** * John 20. 23.

20 **Then charged he his disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.**

21 **From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.**

22 **Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.**

23 **But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me Satan, thou art an offence unto me: for thou savorest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.** * Chap. 10. 38.

24 *** Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himself,** Mark 8. 34.

3. MATTHEW.

self, and take up his crosse, and follow me.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall save it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

* Psalm.

62. 12.

Rom. 2. 6

* Mark

9. 1.

Luke 9.

27.

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels: * And then he shall reward every man according to his works.

28 Verily I say unto you, * There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

CHAP. XVII.

1 The transfiguration of Christ. 14 He healeth the lunatick, 22 foretelleth his passion, 24 payeth tribute.

* Mark

9. 2.

Luke 9.

18.

AND * after six dayes, Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and brings them up into an high mountain apart,

2 And was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

* 1 Pet.

1. 17.

5 * While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased: hear ye him.

6 And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid,

8 And when they had lift up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision unto

CHAP. XVII.

man, untill the Son of man be risen again from the dead. * Chap. 11.14. May. 9.11

10 And his disciples asked him, saying, * Why then say the Scribes that Elias must first come?

11 And Jesus answered, and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things:

12 But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them.

13 Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John Baptist.

17 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certain man, kneeling down to him, and saying, * Mark 9.17. Luke 9.38.

15 Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is lunaticke, and sore vexed: for oftentimes he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water.

16 And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Jesus answered, and said, O faithlesse and peruerse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Jesus rebuked the devill, and he departed out of him, and the childe was cured from that very hour.

19 Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, * Luke 17.6. If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place: and it shall remove, and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

21 Howbeit, this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting. * Chap. 20.17. Mark 9.21. Luke 9.44.

22 ¶ And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men.

23 And they shall kill him, & the third day he shall be raised again: and they were exceeding sorry.

24 ¶ And

S. MATTHEW.

I Called
in the
original
Did-
rachma,
being in
value
fifteen
pence.
For, a
Stater. It
is half
an ounce
of silver
in value
two shil-
lings six-
pence, af-
ter five
shillings
the ounce

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received || tribute money, came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute?

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custome or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers?

26 Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, then are the children free.

27 Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt finde || a piece of money: that take, and give to them for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

¶ Christ teacheth to be humble. 7 Touching of fence, 15 and forgiving one another.

* Mark
9.33.
Luke
9.46.

At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

2 And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them,

* Chap.
19. 4.
1 Cor.
14.20.

3 And said, Verily I say unto you, * Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.

4 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

5 And whoso shall receive one such little child in my Name, receiveth me.

* Mark
9.33.
Luk. 17.
12.

6 * But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which beleve in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

7 ¶ Woe unto the world because of offences: for it must needs be that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh.

† Chap.
5.30.
Mark
9.45.

8 * Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and call them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed,

rather

CHAP. XVIII.

rather then having two hands or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire.

9 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather then having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire.

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.

11 * For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. * Luke 19.10.

12 * How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? * Luke 15.4.

13 And if so be that he finde it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

15 ¶ Moreover, * if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. * Levit. 19.17. Luk. 17.3.

16 But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in * the mouth of two or three witnesses, every word may be established. * Deut. 19.15.

17 And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an * heathen man, and a publican. John 8. 17. 1 Cor. 12.1. Heb 10. 22.

18 Verily I say unto you, * Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. 1 Cor. 13.9. 2 Thes. 3.14.

19 Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. John 20.23. 1 Cor. 13.4.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how

* Luke
17.4.

how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? * till seven times?

- 22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Till seven times: but, untill seventy times seven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.

24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which ought him ten thousand

¶ A talent is 750 ounces of silver, which after five shillings the ounce is 187. l. 10. s. 10^r, be- sought him.

talents. 25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which ought him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

¶ The Roman penny is the eighth part of an ounce, which after five shillings the ounce is 7. d. 6. ob.

29 And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me:

33 Shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also

CHAP. XIX.

unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every
one his brother their trespasses.

CHAP. XIX.

a Christ healeth the sick. 3 and 7 Touching di-
vorcement. 16 How to attain eternal life.

And it came to passe, * that when Jesus had fi. * Mark
finished these sayings, he departed from Galilee, 10.1.
and came into the coasts of Judea beyond Jordan:

2 And great multitudes followed him, and he
healed them there.

3 ¶ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempt-
ing him, and saying unto him, Is it lawfull for a
man to put away his wife for every cause?

4 And he answered and said unto them, Have ye
not read, * that he which made them at the begin- * Gen. 1.
ning, made them male and female? 27.

5 And said, * For this cause shall a man leave * Gen. 2.
father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and 24. Ephe.
* they twain shall be one flesh. 5. 31.
* 2 Cor.

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one
flesh. What therefore God hath joyned together, let
not man put asunder. 6. 16.

7 They say unto him, * Why did Moses then * Deut.
command to give a writing of divorcement, and to 24. 1.
put her away?

8 He saith unto them, Moses, because of the
hardnesse of your hearts, suffered you to put away
your wives, but from the beginning it was not so.

9 * And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put * Chap. 5
away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall 33. mar.
marry another, committeth adultery: & whoso mar- 10. 11.
rieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery. Lube 16.
18.

10 ¶ His disciples say unto him, If the case of
the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry. 1 Cor. 7.
11.

11 But he said unto them, All men cannot re-
ceive this saying, save they to whom it is given.

12 For there are some eunuchs, which were so
born from their mothers womb: and there are some
eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and
there be eunuchs which have made themselves eu-
nuchs for the kingdom of heavens sake. He that is
able to receive it, let him receive it.

S. MATTHEW.

* Mark
10. 13.
Luke 18.
35.

13 ¶ Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put his hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them.

14 But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

* Mark
10. 17.
Luke 18.
18.

16 ¶ And behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternall life?

17 And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is God; but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.

* Exod.
20. 13.

18 He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, * Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness.

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

20 The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet?

21 Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, and follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

24 And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

25 When his disciples heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 But Jesus beheld them, and said unto them, With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.

* Mark
10. 28.
Luke 18.
28.

27 ¶ Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee, what shall we have therefore?

CHAP. XX.

28 And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, * ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, ^{* Luke 22. 30} judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my Names sake, shall receive ^{Chap. 20. 16.} an hundred fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

30 * But many that are first, shall be last, and the last shall be first. ^{Mark 10. 31. Luke 14. 30.}

CHAP. XX.

1 Of the laborers in the vineyard. 20 Christ teacheth his disciples to be lowly.

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire laborers into his vineyard.

2 And when he had agreed with the laborers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market place,

4 And said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise.

6 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and said unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the laborers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last, unto the first.

9 And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more, and they likewise received every man a penny.

11 And when they had received it, they mur-

| The Roman penny is the eighth part of an ounce, which after five shillings the ounce is seven pence halfpenny.

S. MATTHEW.

107,
have con-
tinued
one hour
only.

mured against the good man of the house,
12 Saying, These last I have brought but one
hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us,
which have borne the burden, and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them, and said,
Friend: I do thee no wrong, didst not thou agree
with me for a penny?

14 Take that thine is, and go thy way, I will
give unto this last even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with
mine own? Is thine eye evil because I am good?

* Chap.
19. 30.

16 * So the last shall be first, and the first last:
for many be called, but few chosen.

* Mark
10. 32.
Luke
28. 31.

17 * And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took
the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto
them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son
of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and
unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to
death,

* John
18. 32.

19 * And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to
mock, and to scourge, and to crucifie him: and the
third day he shall rise again.

* Mark
10. 35.

20 * Then came to him the mother of Je-
sues children, with her sons, worshipping him, and
desiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She
saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may
sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the
left in thy kingdom.

22 But Jesus answered and said, He knoweth
what he saith, Are ye able to drink of the cup that
I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism
that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We
are able.

23 And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink
of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that
I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand,
and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given
to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard it, they were
with indignation against the two brethren,

C H A P. XXI.

25 But Iesus called them unto him, and said,
 * Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise
 dominion over them, and they that are great, ex-
 ercise authoritie upon them. * Luke 22, 24.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whoso-
 ever will be great among you, let him be your mi-
 nister;

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let
 him be your servant.

28 Even as the * Son of man came not to be
 ministered unto, but to minister, and to geve his life
 a ransom for many. * Mat. 20, 28.

29 * And as they departed from Jericho, a great
 multitude followed him. * Mark 10, 46, Luke 18, 35.

30 ¶ And behold, two blinde men sitting by the
 way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cryed
 out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son
 of David.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they
 should hold their peace: but they cryed the more, say-
 ing, Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of
 David.

32 And Iesus stood still, and called them, and
 said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may
 be opened.

34 So Iesus had compassion on them, and touch-
 ed their eyes: and immediately their eyes received
 sight, and they followed him.

C H A P. XXI.

1 Christ rideth into Jerusalem on an asse, 11 and
 casteth out the buyers and sellers.

And when they were nigh unto Jerusalem,
 and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount
 of Olives, then sent Iesus two disciples,
* Mark 11, 1, Luke 19, 28.

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over
 against you, and straightway ye shall finde an asse
 tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them
 unto me.

3 And if any man say ought unto you, ye shall
 say, The Lord hath need of them, and straightway
 he will send them.

S. MATTHEW.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled, which was spoken by the prophet saying,

* *Isai. 63*
11.
Zach. 7.9
John 12.
15.
* *Mark*
11.2.
5 * Tell ye the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt, the foal of an ass.

6 * And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,

7 And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and the followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

* *Mark*
11.15.
Luke
19.49.
John 2.
23.
10 * And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the Prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 * And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves:

* *Isaiah*
56.7.
* *Jer. 7.*
31.
Mat. 21.
17.
Luke
19.46.
13 And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer, * but ye have made it a den of thieves.

14 And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the son of David, they were sore displeased;

* *Psal. 124.*
16 And said unto them, Hearest thou what they say? And Jesus said unto them, Yea, have ye not yet read, * Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

17 * And he left them, and went out of the temple into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning, as he returned into the city, he hungered.

* *Mark*
11.8.
19 * And when he saw a fig-tree in the way,

CHAP. XXI.

came to it, and found nothing thereon but leaues onely, and said vnto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever. And presently the fig-tree withered away.

20 And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-tree withered away?

21 Jesus answered and said vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, If ye haue faith and doubt not, ye shall not onely do this which is done to the fig-tree, but also if ye shall say vnto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea, it shall be done.

22 And all things whatsoeuer ye shall ask in prayer, beleeving, ye shall receiue.

23 ¶ And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came vnto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gathe-
* Mark 11.27.
Luke 20.1.

24 And Jesus answered, and said vnto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.

25 The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say vnto us, Why then ye not then beleeue him?

26 But if we shall say, Of men, we fear the people, for all hold John as a prophet.

27 And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

28 ¶ But what thinke you? a certain man had two sons, and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard.

29 He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

30 And he came to the second, and said likewise, and he answered, and said, I go sir, and went not.

31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say vnto him, The first. Jesus saith

S. MATTHEW.

unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicanes and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.

³² For * John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye beleaved him not: but the publicanes and the harlots beleaved him. And ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might beleave him.

³³ ¶ I hear another parable. There was a certain householder * which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey.

* Isa. 5. 1
Jer. 2. 21
Mar. 12. 1
Luko
20. 9.

³⁴ And when the time of the fruit was neere, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

³⁵ And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

³⁶ Again he sent other servants, more then the first, and they did unto them likewise.

³⁷ But last of all, he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son.

³⁸ But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, * This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and let us seiz on his inheritance.

* Chap.
26. 3.
John
8. 33.

³⁹ And they caught him, and cast him out of the vineyard, and slew him.

⁴⁰ When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen?

⁴¹ They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out his vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

* Psal. 118. 12.
Mat. 21. 42.

⁴² Jesus saith unto them, * Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? This is the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

* Rom. 9. 31.
1 Pet. 2. 7
Isa. 7. 14.

⁴³ Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

⁴⁴ And * whosoever shall fall on this stone, he

CHAP. XXII.

be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

45 And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

1 The marriage of the kings son. 9 The calling of the Gentiles. 12 The wedding garment.

AND Jesus answered, * and spake unto them * Luke 1
again by parables, and said, 24. 16.

2 The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, Revel. 19. 9.

3 And sent forth his servants, to call them that were bidden to the wedding, and they would not come.

4 Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner, my oxen, and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the marriage.

5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise:

6 And the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth, and he sent forth his armies and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city.

8 Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden, were not worthy.

9 Go ye therefore into the high ways, and as many as ye shall finde, bid to the marriage.

10 So those servants went out into the high ways, and gathered together all, as many as they found, both bad and good, and the wedding was furnished with guests.

11 And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment.

12 And he saith unto him, Friend, how comest thou

S. MATTHEW.

thou in hisher, not having a wedding garment? And he was speechlesse.

13 Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darknesse, there shall he weeping and gnashing of teeth.

14 * For many are called, but few are chosen.

15 ¶ Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might intangle him in his talk.

16 And they sent out unto him their disciples which the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men.

17 Tell us therefore, what thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cesar, or not?

18 But Jesus perceived their wickednesse, and said, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute money, and they brought unto him a penny.

20 And he saith unto them, Whose is this image, and the superscription?

21 They say unto him, Cessars. Then saith he unto them, * Render therefore unto Cesar the things which are Cessars: and unto God, the things that are Gods.

22 When they had heard these words, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

25 Now there were with us seven brethren, and the first when he had married a wife, deceased, and having no issue, left his wife unto his brother.

26 Likewise the second also, and the third, and the seventh.

27 And last of all the woman died also.

28 Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her.

29 And

* Chap.
20. 16.
* Mark
12. 13.
Luke
20. 20.

16. va-
Ius seven
pence
halfpenny,
Chap. 20.
16. Or,
inscrip-
tion.
* Rom.
23. 7.

* Mark
12. 18.
Luke
20. 27.
* Acts
23. 8.
* Dent.
25. 5.

CHAP. XXII.

29 Jesus answered, and said unto them, Ye do erre, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying,

32 * I am the God of Abraham, and the God of * Exod. Isaac, and the God of Jacob : God is not the God ^{3.6.} of the dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 * But when the Pharisees had heard that * Mark he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. ^{12.38.}

35 Then one of them which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great commandment in the Law ?

37 Jesus said unto him, * Thou shalt love the * Deut. Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy ^{6.5.} soul, and with all thy minde. ^{Luke. 10.37.}

38 This is the first and great commandment.

39 And the second is like unto it, * Thou shalt * Levit. love thy neighbor as thy self. ^{19.18.}

40 On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.

41 * While the Pharisees were gathered to- * Mark 12.15. gether, Jesus asked them. ^{Luke 20.41.}

42 Saying, What thinke ye of Christ : whose son is he ? They say unto him, The son of David.

43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 The Lord said unto my Lord, * Sit thou on * Psal. my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy foot- ^{110.7.} stool :

45 If David then call him Lord, how is he his son ?

46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man (from that day forth) ask him any more questions.

S. MATTHEW,

CHAP. XXIII.

1 The scribes and Pharisees good doctrine, but evil example of life. 34 The destruction of Jerusalem.

Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

2 Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses seat:

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do, but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.

* Luke 11. 46. 4 * For they binde heavy burdens, and grievous to be borne, and lay them on mens shoulders, but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers.

* Num. 15. 38. Deut. 22. 12. 5 But all their works they do, for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

* Mark 12. 38. Luke 11. 46. 6 * And take the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,

7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

* Jam. 3. 1 8 * But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your master, even Christ, and all ye are brethren,

9 And call no man your father upon the earth: * Mel. 2. 6 10 For one is your Father which is in heaven.

10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, even Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant,

* Luke 14. 11. 12 * And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased: and he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted.

* Luke 11. 52. 13 ¶ But * wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in your selves: neither suffer ye them that are entering, to go in.

* Mark 12. 40. Luke 20. 47. 14 * Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye devour widows houses, and for a pretence make long prayer; therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

15 Wo unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!

CHAP. XXIII.

poorite; for ye compasse sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him two fold more the childe of hell, then your selves.

16 Also unto you ye blinde guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing: but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor.

17 Ye fools and blinde: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.

19 Ye fools and blinde: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? Or, a debtor or bound

20 Who so therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And who shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

23 Also unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgement, mercy and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. * Luke 11. 42.

24 Ye blinde guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

25 Also unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; * for ye make clean the outside of the cup, and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excrese. * Luke 11. 39.

26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

27 Also unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all uncleanness.

28 Even so, ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

29 Also unto you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites;

S. MATTHEW.

poorites, because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,
30 And say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnesses unto your selves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and Scribes, and some of them ye shall kill and crucifie, and some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute them from city to city:

* Gen.
6. 8.

35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, * from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

36 Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

* Luke
13. 34.
* 2 Chr.
24. 21.
* 2 Esdr.
2. 10.

37 ¶ O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, * and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thee together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not?

38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIII.

1. The destruction of the temple. 42. Of Christs coming to judgement.

* Mark
13. 1.
Luk. 21. 5.

And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple, and his disciples came to him, for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

* Luke
20. 44.

2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? Verily I say unto you, * There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

CHAP. XXIII,

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us when shall these things be? and what shall be the signs of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my Name, saying I am Christ: and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumors of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to passe, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrows.

9 * Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my Names sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 And this Gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations, and then shall the end come.

15 * When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by * Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand)

16 Then let them which be in Judea, flee into the mountains.

17 Let him which is on the house top, not come down to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him which is in the field, return back to take his clothes.

19 And wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days.

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter:

* Chap.
10. 37.
Luke
21. 12.
John
16. 2.

* Mark
13. 14.
* Daniel
9. 27.

S. MATTHEW.

winter, neither on the sabbath-day :

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those dayes should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved : but for the elects sake those dayes shall be shortened.

* Mark
17. 21.
Luke
17. 37.

23 * Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there ; beleeveth it not.

24 For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signes and wonders, insomuch that (if it were possible) they shall deceive the very elect.

25 Behold, I have told you before.

26 Therefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert, go not forth : Behold, he is in the secret chambers, beleeveth it not.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west : so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

* Luke
17. 37.

28 * For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

* Mark
13. 24.
Luke
21. 29.
Isaiah
13. 10.
Joel 2.
31.
Ezek. 32.

29 Immediately after the tribulation of those dayes, * shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

30 And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven : and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn ; * and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory.

* Revel.
1. 7.
* 1 Cor.
15. 52.
1 Thes.
4. 16.
* Or,
with a trumpet and a great voice.

31 * And he shall send his angels to call a great number of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree : when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that summer is nigh :

33 So likewise ye, when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, even at the doors.

34 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall

CHAP. XXIIII.

shall not passe, till all these things be fulfilled.

35 * Heauen and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away. * Mark 13.35.

36 ¶ But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, nor the angels of heauen, but my Father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

38 * For as in the dayes that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying, and giuing in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, * Gen. 9. luke 17. 25.

39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away: so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

40 * Then shall two be in the field, the one shall be taken, and the other left. * Luke 17.36.

41 Two women shall be grinding at the mill: the one shall be taken, and the other left.

42 ¶ Watch therefore, for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. * Mark 13.35.

43 * But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. * Luke 12.39. 1 Thes. 5.7. Rev. 16. 15.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as you think not, the Son of man cometh.

45 ¶ Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his Lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? * Luke 12.42.

46 Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he cometh shall finde so doing.

47 Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods.

48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his coming.

49 And shall begin to smite his fellows servants, and to eat and drinke with the drunken:

50 The Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not ware of:

51 And shall he cut him asunder, and appoint him his

S. MATTHEW.

his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

1 The parable of the ten virgins: 14 and of the talents. 31 The last judgement described.

Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.

2 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish.

3 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them:

4 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.

5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh, go ye out to meet him.

7 Then all those virgins awoke, and trimmed their lamps.

8 And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil, for our lamps are gone out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there be not enough for us and you, but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the marriage, and the door was shut.

11 Afterwards came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us.

12 But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.

13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day, nor the hour, wherein the Son of man cometh.

14 ¶ For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods.

15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, & to another one, to every man according to his several ability, and straightway took his journey.

16 Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents.

* Chap.
24. 42.
Mar. 13.
33.
* Luke
19. 12.
[A ta-
lent is
157
pound 10
shillings.
Chap.
24. 24.

CHAP. XXV.

17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two.

18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lords money.

19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them.

20 And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliverest unto me five talents, behold, I have gained besides them five talents more.

21 His lord said unto him, Well done thou good and faithful servant, thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

22 He also that had received two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliverest unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents besides them.

23 His lord said unto him, Well done good and faithful servant, thou hast been faithful over a few things: I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent, came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not straved:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine.

26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knowest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not straved.

27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents.

29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, shall be taken away, even that which he hath.

30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping & gnashing of teeth.

31 ¶ When

Chap.
13, 13,
Mark
4. 26.
Luke
8. 13.

S. MATTHEW.

31 ¶ When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:

32 And before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats.

33 And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then shall the king say unto them on his right hand, Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world.

35 * For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in:

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me.

37 Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee: or thirsty, and gave thee drink?

38 When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in: or naked, and clothed thee?

39 Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee?

40 And the king shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, in as much as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me.

41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me ye cursed into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not:

44 Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee?

45 Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, In as much as ye did it not to one of the

* Isaiah
48. 7.
Ezek.
18. 7.

* Psal.
6. 8.
Chap. 7.
23.

C H A P. XXVI.

the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 And * these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal. * Dan. 12. 1. Joh. 3. 36.

C H A P. XXVI.

1 The rulers conspire against Christ. 14 Judas selleth him, 17 Christ eateth the passeover.

AND it came to passe, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

2 * Ye know that after two dayes is the feast of the passeover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified. * Mark 14. 1. Luke 22. 1. Joh. 13. 1.

3 * Then assembled together the chief priests and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, * Joh. 11. 47.

4 And consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill him.

5 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uprore among the people.

6 * Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, * Mark 14. 1. Joh. 12. 1.

7 There came unto him a woman, having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on his head, as he sat at meat.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor.

10 When Jesus understood it, he said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me.

11 * For ye have the poor alwayes with you, but me ye have not alwayes. * Deut. 15. 11.

12 For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial.

13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also this that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

14 * Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto the chief priests, * Mark 14. 10. Luk. 22. 3.

15 And said unto them, What will ye give me, and

S. MATTHEW.

and I will deliver him unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

16 And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

* Mark
14. 12.
Luke
22. 7.

17 ¶ Now the first day of the feast of unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover?

18 And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The master saith, My time is at hand, I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Jesus had appointed them, and they made ready the passover.

* Mark
14. 18.
Luke
22. 14.
John 13.
21.

20 ¶ Now when the even was come, he sat down with the twelve.

21 And as they did eat, he said, Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, Lord, is it I?

* Psal.
21. 9.

23 And he answered and said, He that dipper his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

24 The Son of man goeth as it is written of him: but woe unto that man, by whom the Son of man is betrayed: it had been good for that man if he had not been born.

25 Then Judas which betrayed him answered, and said, Master, is it I? he said unto him, Thou hast said.

* 1 Cor.
11. 24.
Many
Greek
copies
have,
Gave
thanks,

26 ¶ And as they were eating, ¶ Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat, this is my body.

27 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it:

28 For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

29 But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.

* 1 Cor.
11. 26.

30 And when they had sung an hymn, they went out into the mount of Olives.

31 ¶ Then

C H A P. XXVI.

31 Then saith Iesus unto them, * All ye shall be
offended because of me this night: for it is written,
* I will smite the shepherds, and the sheep of the
flock shall be scattered abroad. * Mark
14.27.
John 16.
32.
* Zach.

32 But after I am risen again, * I will go before
you into Galilee. * Mark
14.28.
& 14.7.

33 Peter answered, and said unto him, Though
all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I
never be offended.

34 Iesus said unto him, * Verily I say unto
thee, that this night, before the cock crow, thou shalt
deny me three times. * John
13.38.

35 Peter said unto him, Though I should die
with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise also
said all the disciples.

36 ¶ Then cometh Iesus with them unto a
place called Gethsemane, and saith unto the disci-
ples, Sit ye here, while I go and pray a while. * Mark
14.32.
Luke
22.39.

37 And he took with him Peter, and the two
sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful, and
very heavy.

38 Then saith he unto them, My soul is extream-
ly sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and
watch with me.

39 And he went a little further, and fell on his
face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be pos-
sible, let this cup passe from me: nevertheless, not
as I will, but as thou wilt.

40 And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth
them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, couldest
thou not watch with me one hour?

41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into tempta-
tion: The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh
is weak.

42 He went away again the second time, and pray-
ed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not passe
away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done.

43 And he came and found them asleep again:
for their eyes were heavy.

44 And he left them, and went away again, and
prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith
unto them

S. MATTHEW.

unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest; for behold the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

45 Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

47 ¶ And * while he yet spake, lo, Judas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests and elders of the people.

48 Now he that betrayed him, gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Jesus, and said, Hail master, and kissed him.

50 And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

51 And behold, one of them which were with Jesus, stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and strook a servant of the high priests, and smote off his ear.

52 Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: * for all they that take the sword, shall perish with the sword.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels?

54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, * that thus it must be?

55 In that same hour said Jesus to his multitude, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the * scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

57 ¶ And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led him away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

58 But Peter followed him afar off unto the high priests palace, and went in, and sat with the servants to see the end.

* Mark
14.41.
Luke
21.47.
John
18.3.

* Gen.
9.6.
Revel.
13.10.

* Isaiah
51.16.

* Lam.
4.20.

* Mark
14.53.
Luke
22.54.
John
18.13.

CHAP. XXVI.

59 Now the chief priests and elders, and all the council, sought false witnesse against Iesus to put him to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, yet found they none. At the last came two false witnesses.

61 And said, This fellow said, * I am able to * John 19:1
destroy the temple of God, and to build it in thre^a 19:1
dayes.

62 And the high priest arose, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what is it, which these witnesse against thee?

63 But Iesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him, I asure thee by the living God, that thou tell us, whether thou be the Christ the Son of God.

64 Iesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: Never-^a Chap. 16: 27.
theless, I say unto you, * Hereafter shall ye see the 1 Thes. 4: 16.
Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, Rom. 14: 10.
and coming in the clouds of heaven.

65 Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy: what further need have we of witnesses? Behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy.

66 What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death.

67 * Then did they spit in his face, and buffet-^a Mark 14: 65.
ed him, and others smote him with the palms of Luke 22: 53.
their hands, John 1: 18, 23.

68 Saying, Propheesse unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 * Now Peter sat without in the palace; * Mark 14: 65.
and a damsel came unto him, saying, Thou also Luke 22: 53.
wast with Iesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, this fellow was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And again he denied with an oath, I do not know the man.

73 And after a while came unto him they that stood

3. MATTHEW.

stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech betrayeth thee.

74 Then began he, to curse and to swear, saying, I know not the man. And immediately the cock crew.

75 And Peter remembered the words of Jesus, which said unto him, Before the cock crew, thou shalt deny me thrise, And he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Christ is delivered to Pilate. 3 Judas hanged himself 34 Christ is crucified.

* Mark
15. 1.
Lu. 23. 56
John
18. 28.

When the morning was come, * all the chief priests and elders of the people, took counsel against Jesus to put him to death.

2 And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

3 Then Judas which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders,

4 Saying, I have sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see it to that.

* Acts
1. 18.

5 And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, * and departed, and went and hanged himself.

6 And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for us to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they took counsel, and bought with them the potters field to bury strangers in.

* Acts
1. 19.
* Zach.
11. 13.

8 Wherefore that field was called, * The field of blood unto this day.

* Or,
whom
they
bought
of the
children
of Israel,

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, * And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel had valued.

10 And gave them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me.)

CHAP. XXVII.

11 And Jesus stood before the governour, & the governour asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate unto him, Heardest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee?

14 And he answered him to never a word, in so much that the governour marvelled greatly.

15 Now at that feast the governour was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

* Luke
23. 17.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?

18 For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

19 When he was set down on the judgement seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.

20 But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas, and deliver Jesus.

* John
18. 40.
A 2. 3. 14.

21 The governour answered, and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas.

22 Pilate said unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ? They all said unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governour said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, saying, Let him be crucified.

24 When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but that rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed his hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye to it.

25 Then answered all the people, and said;

D

His

S. MATTHEW.

His blood be on us, and our on'chilozen.

26 ¶ Then released he Barabbas unto them, and when he had scourged Iesus, he delivered him to be crucified.

27 * Then the souldiers of the governour took Iesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of souldiers.

28 And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe.

29 ¶ And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand, and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail king of the Jews.

30 And they spit upon him, and took the reed and smote him on the head.

31 And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucifie him.

32 * And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his crosse.

33 * And when they were come unto a place, called Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

34 ¶ They gave him vinegar to drink, mingled with gall: and when he had tasted thereof, he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, & parted his garments, casting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, * They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

36 And sitting down, they watched him there:

37 And set up over his head, his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

38 Then were there two thieves crucified with him: one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 ¶ And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,

40 And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in threes dayes, save thy self: if thou be the Son of God, come down from the crosse.

41 Likewise also the chief priests mocked

* John
19. 1.
18. 40.
verours
house.

* Mark
16. 21.
Luke 23.
36.
* John
19. 17.

* Psalm,
22. 18.

CHAP. XXVII.

him, with the scribes and elders, said,

42 He saves others, himself he cannot save: if he be the king of Israel, let him now come down from the crosse, and we will beleve him.

43 He trusted in God, let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God. * Psal. 22. 2. Wils. 2. 25. 16.

44 The thieves also which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land unto the ninth hour.

46 And about the ninth hour Jesus cryed with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani, that is to say, * My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? * Psal. 22. 1.

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, * and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. * Psal. 69. 12.

49 The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him.

50 ¶ Jesus, when he had cryed again with a loud voice, yielded up the Ghost.

51 And behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom, and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent,

52 And the graves were opened, and many bodies of saints which slept arose,

53 And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many.

54 Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earth quake, and all these things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

55 And many women were there (beholding a far off) which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him.

56 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the Mother of James and Josias, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

S. MATTHEW.

* Mark
15. 41.
Luke
23. 50.
John
19. 38.

57 * When the even was come, there came a man of Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus disciple:

58 He went to Pilate & begged the body of Jesus: then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered unto him.

59 And when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean linen cloth,

60 And laid it in his own new tomb, which had been hewn out in the rock: & he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

61 And there was Mary Magdalene, and another Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

62 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate,

63 Saying, Sir, we remember that that he said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.

64 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse then the first.

65 Pilate said unto them, He have a watch set over you, make it as sure as you can.

66 So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch,

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Christs resurrection. 9 He appeareth to women, 16 and to his disciples, 19 and he sendeth them to preach and baptize.

In the * end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn towards the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene, & the other Mary to see the sepulchre.
3 And behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

3 His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow.

4 And for fear of him the keepers did quake, and became as a dead man.

* Mark
16. 1.
John
10. 1.
¶ Or,
had been

CHAP. XXVIII.

5 And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And go quickly, and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead, And behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him: so, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with fear, and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: Go tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers.

13 Saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governors ears, we will persuade him, and secure you.

15 So they took the money, and did as they were taught. And this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

16 ¶ Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

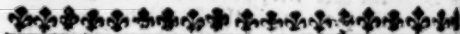
18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven, and in earth.

19 ¶ Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the holy Ghost.

^a Mark 16-17.

S. MARK.

20 Teaching them to observe all things whateuer I haue commaunded you: and lo, I am with you alway, euen unto the end of the world. Amen.



THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT MARK.

CHAP. I.

1 John the Baptists office. 9 Jesus baptized, 13 tempted, 14 preacheth, 16 calleth Peter and others, 23 cureth many.

In the beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ the Son of God,

2 As it is written in the prophets, * Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

3 * The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his path straight.

4 * John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance, & for the remission of sins.

5 * And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, & were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

6 And John was clothed with camels hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins: and he eat locusts and wilde honey,

7 And preached, saying, There cometh a mightier then I after me, the latchet of whose shoe I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

9 * And it came to passe in those dayes, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And straightway coming out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like doves descending upon him.

11 And there came a voice from heaven, saying

* Mal.
3.1.

* Isaiah
40.3.
Ezekiel 34.
John 1.23.
* Mark.

3.1.
* Or,
unto,
* Mark.
3.3.

* Mark.
3.4.

* Mark.
1.3.

* Or,
loven,
* y rent.

C H A P. I.

Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

12 * And immediately the Spirit drieth him into the wilderness. * Matth. 4.1.

13 And he was there in the wilderness forty dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wilde beasts, and the angels ministered unto him.

14 Now after that John was put in prison, * Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, * Matth. 4.12.

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and beleue the gospel.

16 * Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea, (for they were fishers.) * Matth. 4.12.

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw James the son of Zebedee, & John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

21 * And they went into Capernaum, and straightway on the sabbath-day he entred into the synagogue, and taught. * Matth. 4.13.

22 * And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes. * Matth. 7.28.

23 * And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cried out, * Luke 4.33.

24 Saying, Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the holy One of God.

25 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

S. MARK.

27 And they were all amazed, inasmuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? For with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

* Matth.
3.14.

29 * And forthwith when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

30 But Simons wifes mother lay sick of a fever: and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lift her up, and immediately the fever left her, and she ministered unto them.

32 And at even when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils:

33 And all the city was gathered together at the doore.

34 And he healed many that were sick of divers diseases, and cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.

35. to
say that
they
knew
him.

35 And in the morning rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him:

37 And when they had found him, they said unto him, All men seek for thee.

38 And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for there come I forth.

39 And he preached in their synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

* Matth.
3.2.

40 * And there came a leper to him, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

41 And Jesus moved with compassion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will, be thou clean.

42 And as soon as he had spoken, immediately

CHAP. II.

the leprosie departed from him and he was cleansed.

43 And he straightly charged him, and forthwith sent him away;

44 And saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man; but go thy way, shew thy self to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

45 * But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter: insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter. * Luke 5. 15.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ healeth the sick of the palsey, 14 calleth Matthew, 15 and eateth with Publicanes and sinners.

AND again * he entered into Capernaum after some dayes, and it was noised that he was in the house. * Mat. 9. 1

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive them, no not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.

3 And they come unto him, bringing one sick of the palsey, which was borne of four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for presse, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsey lay.

5 When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsey, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee.

6 But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts,

7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God onely? * Job. 19. 4. 1. Sai. 48. 25.

8 And immediately when Jesus perceived in his spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Why reason you these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsey, Thy sins be forgiven thee: or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed and walk?

S. MARK.

10 But that ye may know, that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins (he saith to the sick of the palsy.)

11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house.

12 And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

13 And he went forth again by the sea side, and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

* Matth.

9.9.

For, at
the place
where
the mis-
son was
receive

14 * And as he passed by he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him follow me. And he arose and followed him.

15 And it came to passe, that as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many Publicans and sinners came altogether with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with Publicanes and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicanes and sinners?

17 When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous but sinners to repentance.

* Matth.

3.14.

Luk. 5.32

18 * And the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees used to fast; and they come and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

For, saw

as un-
wrought

21 No man also seweth a piece of a new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up, taketh away from the old, & the rent is made worse.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles.

C H A P. III.

elles, else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilt, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.

23 * And it came to passe, that he went through the cornfields on the sabbath-day, and his disciples * Matth. 12.1. began as they went to pluck the ears of corn.

24 And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on \hat{s} sabbath-day that which is not lawful?

25 And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him?

26 How he went into the house of God in the daies of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawful to eat, but for \hat{s} priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

27 And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath.

28 Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

C H A P. III.

1 The withered hand healed. 13 Thetwelve apostles chosen. 31 Who are Christs brother, sister and mother.

AND * he entred again into the synagogue, and * Matth. 12.9. there was a man there which had a withered hand:

2 And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath-day, \hat{y} they might accuse him.

3 And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

4 And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath-daies, or to do evil: to save life, or to kill? but they hold their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them, with anger, being grieved for the \parallel hardness of their Or, blindness hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

6 And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

7 But Jesus withdraweth himself with his disci-

5. MARK.

ples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Tiber,

8 And from Jerusalem, and from Joudaea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon: a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him.

9 And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him:

¶ Or,
rushed.

10 For he had healed many, insomuch that they pressed upon him, for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

11 And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cryed, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

12 And he strictly charged them that they should not make him known.

¶ Math.
20. 1.

13 And he goeth up into a mountain, & calleth unto him whom he would: and they came unto him.

14 And he ordained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach:

15 And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils.

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder.)

18 And Andrew, & Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananite,

¶ Or,
home,

19 And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into an house.

¶ Or, kind
men.

20 And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.

21 And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him, for they said, He is beside himself.

¶ Math.
9. 34.

22 And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem, said, He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils.

C H A P. I I I I.

23 And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables: How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdom be divided against it self, that kingdom cannot stand.

25 And if a house be divided against it self, that house cannot stand.

26 And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoil his goods, except he will first bind the strong man, and then he will spoil his house.

28 * Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies whosoever they shall blaspheme: * Matthe. 12. 31.

29 But he that shall blaspheme against the holy Ghost, hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation.

30 Because they said he hath an unclean spirit. * Matthe. 12. 46.

31 * There came then his brethren, and his mother, and standing without, sent unto him, calling him.

32 And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

35 For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

C H A P. I I I I.

1 The parable of the sower. 14 The meaning thereof. 16 Of the seed growing secretly. 20 Of the mustard seed.

And he began again to teach by the sea side: * Matthe. 13. 1.
and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea, and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine.

3 Hearken

S M A R K.

3 Hearken, behold there went out a sower to sow.

4 And it came to passe as he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and the fowls of the air came, and devoured it up.

5 And some fell on stonie ground, where it had not much earth: and immediatly it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.

8 And other fell on good ground, & did yeeld fruit that sprang up, and increased, and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

9 And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked him of the parable.

11 And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

12 * That seeing they may see, and not perceive, and hearing they may hear, and not understand, lest at any time they should be converted, and their sins should be forgiven them.

* Matth.
13. 14.

13 And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will you know all parables?

14 ¶ The sower sowerth the word.

15 And these are they by the way-side, where the word is sown, but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediatly, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sown on stonie ground, who when they have heard the word, immediatly receive it with gladnesse:

17 And have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the wordes sake, they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sown among thorns: such as hear the word,

19 And

CHAP. IIII.

19 And the cause of this world,* and the deceit. * 1 Tim. 6. 17.
fulness of riches, and the lusts of other things en-
sling in, choke the world, and it becometh unfruitful.

20 And these are they which are sown on good ground, such as hear the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit, some thirty fold, some sixty, and some an hundred.

21 ¶ And he said unto them, Is a candle brought * Mat. 1
to be put under a bushel, or under a bed? and not
5. 16.
to be set on a candlestick?

22 For there is nothing hid, which shall not be
manifested: neither was any thing kept secret, but
the word in the ori-
that it should come abroad. ginal, 'g-
nificeth a
lesse mea-
sure as

23 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

24 And he said unto them, Take heed what you
hear: * with what measure ye mete, it shall be mea-
sured to you: and unto you that hear, shall more be
given. Mat. 13
1. 24.
* Mat. 13.
7 2.
* Mat. 13.
13. 12.

25 * For he that hath, to him shall be given: and
he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that
which he hath

26 ¶ And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as
if a man should cast seed into the ground,

27 And should sleep, and rise night & day, and the
seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how.

28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of her self,
first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn
in the ear.

29 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediat-
ly he gathereth in the sickle, because the harvest is come. 10. ripe.

30 ¶ And he said, * Whereunto shall we liken
the kingdom of God? or with what comparison
shall we compare it? * Mat. 13
13. 31.

31 It is like a grain of mustard seed, which
when it is sown in the earth, is lesse then all the
seeds that be in the earth.

32 But when it is sown, it groweth up, and be-
cometh greater then all herbs, and shooteth out
great branches, so that the fowls of the air may
lodge under the shadow of it.

33 * And with many such parables spake he the
word unto them, as they were able to hear it. * Mat. 13
13. 34.

34 But

S MARK.

34 But with in a parable spake he not unto them, and when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

* Matth. 8. 23. 35 And the same day when the even was come, he saith unto them, Let us passe over unto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him, even as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And there arose a great storm of winde, and the waves beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And he was in the hinder part of the ship asleep on a pillow: and they awake him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arooke, and rebuked the winde, and saith unto the sea, Peace, be still: and the winde ceased, and there was a great calm.

40 And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearful? how is it that you have no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What manner of man is this, that even the winde and the sea obey him?

C H A P. V.

1 Christ delivering the possessed of the legion of devils, 13 They enter into the swine. 35 Jairus his daughter raised from death.

* Matth. 8. 28. **A**ND they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the countrey of the Gadarenes.

2 And when he was come out of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit,

3 Who has his dwelling among the tombs, and no man could bind him, no nor with chains:

4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes night and day he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones,

6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped him,

CHAP. V.

7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of the most high God? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And he besought him much that he would not send them away out of the country.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding.

12 And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine, and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine, fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the Legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind, and they were amazed.

16 And they that saw it, told them how it befel to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coasts.

18 And when he was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devil, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit, Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Jesus had done for him; and all men did marvel.

21 And

S. MARK.

* Mark.
9.18.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again h
ship unto the other side, much people gathered un
him, and he was nigh unto the sea.

22 * And behold, there cometh one of the rulers
of the synagogue, Jesus by name, and when
saw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And besought him greatly, saying, My litt
daughter lieth at the point of death. I pray t
come and lay thy hands on her, that she may b
healed, and she shall live.

24 And Jesus went with him, and much peopl
followed him, and thronged him.

25 And a certain woman which had an issue
blood twelve yeers.

26 And had suffered many things of many phy
sicians, and had spent all that she had, and was n
thing bettered, but rather grew worse,

27 When she had heard of Jesus, came in th
preele behind, and touched his garment.

28 For she said, If I may touch but his clothes,
I shall be whole.

29 And straightway the fountain of her blood
was dried up: and she felt in her body that she wa
healed of that plague.

30 And Jesus immediately knowing in him
that vertue had gone out of him, turned him abou
in the preele, and said, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest
the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who
touched me?

32 And he looked round about to see her that ha
done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing & trembling, know
ing what was done in her, came, and fell down be
fore him, and told him all the truth.

34 And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith
hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole
of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there came from the
ter of the synagogues house, certain which said,
Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Ma
ster any further?

C H A P. VI.

36 As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he said unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

37 And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter and James, and John the brother of James.

38 And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.

39 And when he was come in, he said unto them, Why make ye this ado, and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorn: but when he had put them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entreath in where the damsel was lying.

41 And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha cumi, which is, being interpreted, damsel (I say unto thee) Arise.

42 And straightway the damsel arose, and walked, for she was of the age of twelve years: and they were astonished with a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them straitly, that no man should know it: and commanded that something should be given her to eat.

C H A P. VI

1 Christ is contemned of his countrey men.

18 John Baptist is beheaded. 45 Christ walketh upon the sea.

And ^{• Matth. 13. 36.} he went out from thence, and came into his own countrey, and his disciples follow him.

2 And when the sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing him, were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? and what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James and Joses, and of Juda, and

S. M A R K

and Simon? And are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at him.

* John
4.44.

4 But Jesus said unto them, * A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house.

5 And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them.

6 And he marvelled because of their unbelief. * And he went round about the villages teaching.

* Mar.
9.35.
Luke
19.29.

7 * And he calleth unto him the twelve, and began to send them forth by twos and twos, and gave them power over unclean spirits,

* M. tch.
10.1.

8 And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staffe only: no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse:

1 The
word fig-
nifieth a
piece of
brasse

9 But be shod with sandals: and not put on two coats.

money,
in value
some
what less

10 And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

then a
farthing,
Mat. 10.9

11 * And whosoever shall not receive you, nor heare you, when ye depart thence, * shake off the dust under your feet, for a testimony against them: verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement, then for that city.

but here
it is ta-
ken in
generall
for mo-
ney.

12 And they went out, and preached that men should repent.

* Matth.
10.14.

13 And they cast out many devils, * and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them.

* Luke
13.58.
James
5.14.

14 * And king Herod heard of him, (for his name was spread abroad:) and he said that John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

* Matth.
14.1.

15 Others said, that it is Elias. And others said, that it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

* Luke
3.29.

16 * But when Herod heard thereof, he said

It

CHAP. VI.

It is John, whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himself had sent forth, and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake his brother Philip's wife, for he had married her.

18 For John had said unto Herod, * It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a just man, and an holy, and observed him: and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birth day made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief estates of Galilee:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee.

23 And he swore unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.

24 And she went forth and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger, the head of John the Baptist.

26 And the king was exceeding sorry, yet for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her.

27 And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought, and he went and beheaded him in the prison,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel, and the damsel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and

* Levit.

18. 16

for an

inward

grudge.

for,

kept

him, or

saved

him.

S. MARK.

and tooke up his corps, and laid it in a tomb.

* Luke
9. 19.

30 * And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Iesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye your selves apart into a desert place, and rest a while, For there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

* Matth.
24. 13.

32 * And they departed into a desert place by themselves.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

* Matth.
2. 36.

34 * And Iesus when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

* Matth.
26. 15.

35 * And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed.

36 Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

The
women
penny is
seven
pence
half penny,
as
Mat. 18.
28.

37 He answered, and said unto them, Give them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we give them to eat? We have here two hundred penny worth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go, and see. And when they knew, they say, five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.

40 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves, and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

C H A P. VI.

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before he unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

107. over
against
Bethsai-
da.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 * And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

* Matth.
14.23.

48 And he saw them toiling in rowing (for the winde was contrary unto them:) and about the fourth watch of the night, he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled.) And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was hardened.

53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore.

* Matth.
14.35.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway he knew him.

55 And ran thither that whole region round about: and began to carry about in beds, those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entered into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him, were made whole.

107. 12.

S. MARK. CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees finde fault with the disciples eating with unwalshen hands. 14 Meat defiled
for the man.

* Matth. 15. 1. **T**hen came together unto him the Pharisees and certain of the scribes which came from Jerusalem.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with hands which they had not walshed (that is to say, with unwalshed hands) they found fault.

3 For the Pharisees and all the Jews, when they wash their hands, they eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

4 And when they come from the market, they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups and pots, brazen vessels, and tables.

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwalshed hands?

6 He answered, and said unto them, Well saith Isaiah prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

7 Wherefore in vain do they worship me, teaching doctrines the commandments of men.

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your tradition.

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and mother: and whoso curseth father or mother, him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me, he shall be free.

* Matth. 23. 5.

C H A P. VII.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father, or his mother :

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered; and many such like things do ye.

14 ¶ And when he had called all the people ^{* Matth. 15. 10.} unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me, & obey one of you, and understand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entering into him can defile him; but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive that whatsoeuer thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

20 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 ¶ For from within, out of the heart of men, ^{* Gen. 6. 5. and 8. 21.} proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, covetousnesse, wickednesse, deceit, ^{* Matth. 15. 19.} lasciviousnesse, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishnesse,

23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ And from thence he arose, and went into ^{* Matth. 15. 21.} the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into an house, and would have no man know it, but he could not be hid.

25 For a certain woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his feet.

26 (The woman was a Jewess, a Syrophenician by nation :) and she besought him that he ^{Galilee} would

S. MARK.

would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be fill'd: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

28 And she answered and said unto him, Lord, yet the dogs under the table, eat of the childrens crumbs.

29 And he said unto her, For this saying go thy way, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

31 ¶ And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee: where the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him, to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and said unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

36 And he charged them, that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it,

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ feedeth the people miraculously, & refuseth to give a signe to the Pharisees

^a *Math.* 15. 32. **I**n those dayes ^a the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and saith unto them,

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three dayes, and have nothing to eat.

CHAP. VIII.

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satiate these men with bread here in the wilderness?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand: and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 * And the Pharisees came forth, and began to * Matth. 16.1. question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? Verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.

13 And he left them, and entering into the ship again, departed to the other side.

14 ¶ Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more * Matth. 16.5. than one loaf.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is * because we have no bread. * Matth. 16.7.

17 And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? Per-

S. MARK.

ceiue ye not yet, neither understand: haue ye yet
heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes see ye not? and hauing ears
hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the fixe loaves among the
thousand: how many baskets full of fragments take
ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.

20 And when the seuen among four thousand
how many baskets full of fragments took ye up,
and they said, Seven.

21 And he said unto them, How is it that ye
not understand?

22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethsaida; and the
bring a blinde man unto him, and besought him
touch him:

23 And he took the blinde man by the hand, and
led him out of the town, and when he had spit on his
eyes, and put his hand upon him, he asked him
he saw ought.

24 And he looked up, and said, I see men, and
trees, walking.

25 After that he put his hands again upon his
eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored,
and saw every man clearly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, saying,
Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in the
town.

• Matth.
23. 13.

27 ¶ And Jesus went out, and his disciples
into the towns of Cesarea Philippi: and by the
way he asked his disciples, saying unto them,
Whom do men say that I am?

28 And they answered, John the Baptist: and
some say, Elias: and others, one of the prophets.

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say
ye that I am? And Peter answereth and saith unto
him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them, that they should tell
no man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the Son of
man must suffer many things, and be rejected of
elders, and of the chief priests and scribes, and
killed, and after three dayes rise again.

C H A P. IX.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter tooke him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him, with his disciples also, he said unto them, * *Matth. 10. 38.*
* Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse, and follow me.

35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospels, the same shall save it,

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

38 * Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels. * *Matth. 10. 33.*

C H A P. IX.

1 Jesus is transfigured. 10 He foretelleth his death and resurrection: 33 and giveth divers instructions to his disciples.

AND he said unto them, * *Matth. 16. 28.*
* Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

2 ¶ * And after six dayes, Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them. * *Matth. 17. 1.*

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow: so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here, and let us make

S. MARK.

the tabernacles; one for thee, and one for John
and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were so
astond.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them
and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, This
my beloved Son: hear him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round
about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only
with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain
he charged them that they should tell no man what
things they had seen, till the Son of man were
sent from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves,
questioning one with another what the saying
the dead should mean.

11 ¶ And they asked him saying, Why say
the scribes, that Elias must first come?

12 And he answered, and told them, Elias ver-
cometh first, and restoreth all things. and how it
is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer
many things, and be set at nought.

13 But I say unto you, that Elias is in-
come, and they have done unto him whatsoever the
law listeth, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ And when he came to his disciples,
he saw a great multitude about them, and the scri-
bes questioning with them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they
beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running
to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the scribes, What question-
est with them?

17 And one of the multitude answered, and said,
Master, I have brought unto thee my son, who
hath a dumb spirit:

18 And wheresoever it taketh him, he tear-
eth him, and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth,
and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that
they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 He answered him, and said, O faithless
generation,

* Isaiah
53.23.

* Matth. 9
37.4.

¶ Or,
among
y. or
selves.

¶ Or,
doth he
him.

CHAP. IX.

neration, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed, foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a childe.

22 And oft times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to kill of him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that beleeueth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I beleeue, help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 ¶ And they departed thence, and passed thro. * Matth. 17. 12.
row Galilee, and he would not that any man should know it.

31 For he taught his Disciples, and said unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

33 ¶ And he came to Capernaum; and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your selves by the way? * Matth. 23

S. MARK.

* Luke
9.19.

and tooke up his corps, and laid it in a tomb.

30 * And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said unto them, Come ye your selves apart into a desert place, and rest a while, For there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure to eat.

* Matth.
24.13.

32 * And they departed into a desert place by themselves.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and ran afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him.

* Matth.
2.36.

34 * And Jesus when he came out, saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he began to teach them many things.

* Matth.
16.15.

35 * And when the day was now far spent, the disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time is far passed.

36 Send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they have nothing to eat.

The
Tomen
peny is
seven
pence
half pe-
ny, as
Mat. 18.
28.

37 He answered, and said unto them, Give them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we and buy two hundred penny-worth of bread, and give them to eat?

38 He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go, and see. And when they knew, they say, five, and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass.

40 And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when he had taken the five loaves, and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.

C H A P. VI.

42 And they did all eat and were filled.

43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaves, were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side betwixt ^{10. over} Bethsaida. while he sent away the people.

46 And when he had sent them away, he departed into a mountain to pray.

47 * And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them toiling in rowing (for the winde was contrary unto them:) and about the fourth watch of the night, he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer, it is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went up unto them into the ship, and the winde ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaves, for their heart was hardened.

53 * And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Genesareth, and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway he knew him.

55 And ran thorow that whole region round about: and began to carry about in beds, those that were sick, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched ^{10. 12.} him, were made whole.

S. MARK.
CHAP. VII.

1 The Pharisees finde fault with the disciples eating with unwalshen hands. 14 Meat defileth not the man.

* Matth.
15. 1.

Then * came together unto him the Pharisees and certain of the scribes which came from Jerusalem.

Or, com-
mon.

2 And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with * defiled (that is to say, with unwalshen) hands, they found fault.

Or, dili-
gently,

3 For the Pharisees and all the Jews, * they wash their hands * oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

in the
original,

4 And when they come from the market, they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as washing of cups and * pots, brazen vessels, and * tables.

with the
6th: Thro-

5 Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwalshen hands?

phylact,

6 He answered, and said unto them, Well * saith Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, * This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

up to the
elbow.

7 Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching doctrines the commandments of men.

6 Sexta-

8 For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

about a
pint and
an half.

9 And he said unto them, Full well ye * keep the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.

Or, beds

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and mother: and whoso curseth father or mother, him die the death.

* Isaiah
29. 13.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is * Corban, that is to say, a gift, whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me, he shall be free.

Matth.
15. 8.

Or, fra-
strate.

* Matth.
15. 5.

C H A P. VII.

12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father, or his mother :

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered : and many such like things do ye.

14 ¶ And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me, every one of you, and understand. * Matthe. 18. 10.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entering into him can defile him ; but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

17 And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.

18 And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also ? Do ye not perceive that whatsoeuer thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats ?

20 And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 ¶ For from within, out of the heart of men, * Gen. 6. 5. and 8. 21. proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

22 Thefts, covetousnesse, wickednesse, Deceit, * Matthe. 15. 19. lasciviousnesse, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishnesse.

23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ And from thence he arise, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into an house, and would have no man know it, but he could not be hid. * Matthe. 15. 21.

25 For a certain woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came, and fell at his feet.

26 (The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation :) and she besought him that he would

S. MARK.

would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

27 But Jesus said unto her, Let the child first be fill'd: for it is not meet to take the childrens bread, and to cast it unto the dogs.

28 And she answered and said unto him, Lord, yet the dogs under the table, eat of the chens crumbs.

29 And he said unto her, For this saying god sayeth, the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon her bed.

31 And again departing from the coasts Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring unto him one that was dumb, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him, to put his hand upon him.

33 And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue.

34 And looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.

36 And he charged them, that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much more a great deal they published it,

37 And were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Christ feedeth the people miraculously, and refuseth to give a signe to the Pharisees

* Matth.
13. 12.

And those dayes * the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples unto him, and saith unto them,

2 I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me threes dayes, and have nothing to eat.

CHAP. VIII.

3 And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for others of them came from far.

4 And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy these men with bread here in the wilderness?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, seven.

6 And he commanded the people to sit down on the ground: and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before them: and they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken meat that was left, seven baskets.

9 And they that had eaten were about four thousand: and he sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 * And the Pharisees came forth, and began to * Matth. 16. 1. question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? Verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.

13 And he left them, and entering into the ship again, departed to the other side.

14 ¶ Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more * Matth. 16. 5. than one loaf.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is * because we have no bread. * Matth. 16. 7.

17 And when Jesus knew it, he saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread? Ver-

S. MARK.

ceibe ye not yet, neither understand? have ye yet
heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes see ye not? and having ear
hear ye not? and do ye not remember?

19 When I brake the five loaves among
thousand: how many baskets full of fragments sta
ye up? They say unto him, Twelve.

20 And when the seven among four thousand
how many baskets full of fragments took ye up
and they said, Seven.

21 And he said unto them, How is it that ye
not understand?

22 ¶ And he cometh to Bethsaida, and
bring a blinde man unto him, and besought him
touch him:

23 And he took the blinde man by the hand, a
led him out of the town, and when he had spit on
eyes, and put his hand upon him, he asked him
he saw ought.

24 And he looked up, and said, I see men,
trees, walking.

25 After that he put his hands again upon
eyes, and made him look up: and he was rejoyced
and saw every man cleerly.

26 And he sent him away to his house, say
Neither go into the town, nor tell it to any in
town.

¶ Math.
23. 23.

27 ¶ And Jesus went out, and his disci
into the towns of Cesarea Philippi: and by
way he asked his disciples, saying unto them
Whom do men say that I am?

28 And they answered, John the Baptist:
some say, Elias: and others, one of the prophets.

29 And he saith unto them, But whom say
that I am? And Peter answereth and saith
him, Thou art the Christ.

30 And he charged them, that they should
man of him.

31 And he began to teach them, that the So
man must suffer many things, and be rejected of
elders, and of the chief priests and scribes, and
killed, and after three dayes rise again.

C H A P. IX.

32 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter tooke him, and began to rebuke him.

33 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for thou savourst not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

34 ¶ And when he had called the people unto him, with his disciples also, he said unto them, * *Marcho*
* Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his crosse, and follow me. *10.38.*

35 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospels, the same shall save it,

36 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

37 ¶ What shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

38 * Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy angels. ** Marcho 10.33.*

C H A P. IX.

1 Jesus is transfigured: 20 He foretelle h^e his death and resurrection: 33 and giveth diverse instructions to his disciples.

AND he said unto them, * *Marcho*
* Verily I say unto you, that there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power. *16.28.*

2 ¶ And after six dayes, Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeith them up into an high mountain apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them. ** Marcho 17.1.*

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow: so as no fuller on earth can white them.

4 And there appeared unto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here, and let us make

S. MARK.

three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were astonished.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them, and a voice came out of the cloud, saying, Thou my beloved Son: hear him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus only with themselves.

9 And as they came down from the mountain, he charged them that they should tell no man the things they had seen, till the Son of man were sent from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean.

11 ¶ And they asked him saying, Why say the scribes, that Elias must first come?

12 And he answered, and told them, Elias he cometh first, and restoreth all things. and ^{* Isaiah 53. 23.} as it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

13 But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever is written of him.

14 ¶ ^{* Matth. 23. 4.} And when he came to his disciples, saw a great multitude about them, and the same questioning with them.

15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And he asked the scribes, What questionest with them?

17 And one of the multitude answered, and said, Master, I have brought unto thee my son, who hath a dumb spirit:

18 And wheresoever it taketh him, he taketh him, and he smeth, and gnasheth with his teeth, pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 He answereth him, and saith, O faithless generation,

¶ Or, among y. or selves.

¶ Or, doth he taketh him.

nera

CHAP. IX.

generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and wallowed, foaming.

21 And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child.

22 And oft times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to kill of him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.

23 Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things are possible to him that believeth.

24 And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe, help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cryed, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and he was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

29 And he said unto them, This kinde can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 ¶ And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee, and he would not that any man should know it. * Matth. 17. 13.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said unto them, the Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask him.

33 ¶ And he came to Capernaum; and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among your selves by the way? * Matth. 2. 1

S. MARK.

34 But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves who should be the greatest.

35 And he sat down and called the twelve, and said unto them, if any man desire to be first, he must be last of all, and servant of all.

36 And he took a childe, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my Name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

38 ¶ And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy Name, and we followeth not us, and we forbade him, because he followeth not us.

39 But Jesus said, Forbid him not; for there is no man, which shall do a miracle in my Name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

40 For he that is not against us, is on our part.

41 ¶ For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my Name, because ye belong to Christ, Verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward.

42 ¶ And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

43 ¶ And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched.

44 ¶ Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

46 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God

* Luke
9.49.

* 1 Cor.
12.3.

* Matth.
20.40.

* Matth.
23.6.

* Matth.
5.29, and
18.8.
¶ Or,
cause
thee to
offend.
* Isaiah
66.24.

¶ Or,
cause
thee to
offend.

C H A P. X.

with one eye, then having two eyes to be cast into hell fire :

48 Where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall be salted with fire, * and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. * Levit. 2. 12.

50 * Salt is good : but if the salt have lost his saltnesse, wherewith will you season it ? Have salt in your selves, and have peace one with another. * Matth. 5. 13.

C H A P. X.

2 Touching divorcement. 13 Little children brought to Christ. 17 The danger of riches.

And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea, by the farther side of Jordan : and the people resort unto him again, and as he was wont, he taught them again. * Matth. 19. 1.

2 And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife ? tempting him.

3 And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you ?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away.

5 And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardnesse of your heart he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife,

8 And they twain shall be one flesh : so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same matter.

11 And he saith unto them, * Whosoever shall put away his wife and marry another, committeth adultery against her. * Matth. 5. 32. ^{and} 19. 9.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

S. MARK.

Marth.
9.13.

13 ¶ And they brought young children to him that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for such is the kingdom of God.

15 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put his hands upon them, and blessed them.

Marth.
29.16.

17 ¶ And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

18 And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is no man good but one, that is God.

19 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour father and mother.

20 And he answered and said unto him, What all these have I observed from my youth.

21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest, go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come, take up the cross, and follow me.

22 And he was sad at that saying, and he went away grieved, for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Jesus looked round about, and said unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God?

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdom of God?

25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

CHAP. X.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Jesus looking upon them, saith, With men it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, * *Matth.*
we have left all, and have followed thee. 19.29.

29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake, and the gospels,

30 But he shall receive an hundred fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life:

31 * But many that are first, shall be last: and the last, first. * *Matth.*
19.30.

32 ¶ And they were in the way going up to * *Matth.*
Jerusalem: and Jesus went before them, and they 20.17.
were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,

33 Saying, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes: and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles.

34 And they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him, and the third day he shall rise again.

35 ¶ And James and John, the sons of Zebedee come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire. * *Matth.*
20.20.

36 And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you?

37 They said unto him, Grant unto us, that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand in thy glory.

38 But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?

S. MARK.

39 And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of, and with the baptism that I am baptized withal, shall ye be baptized :

40 But to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but it shall be given unto them for whom it is prepared.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

* Luke
23.35.
I O P.
think
good.

42 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, * Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them : and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

43 But so shall it not be among you : but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister :

44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

45 For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

* Mathe.
20.2.

46 ¶ * And they came to Jericho : and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blinde Bartimeus, the son of Timæus, sat by the high way side, begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou Son of David have mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace, but he cried the more a great deal, Thou Son of David have mercy on me.

49 And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called : and they call the blinde man, saying unto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And he casting away his garment, rose, and came to Jesus.

51 And Jesus answered and said unto him, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee ? The blinde man said unto him, Lord, that I might receive my sight.

52 And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way, thy

C H A P. XI.

faith hath made the whole: and immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way. ¶ Or. saved thee,

C H A P. XI.

2 Christ rideth with triumph to Jerusalem,
12 He curseth the fruitlesse leafie tree. 16 He purgeth the temple.

AND when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage, and Bethanie, at the mount of olives, he sendeth forth two of his disciples,

2 And saith unto them, Go your way into the villiage ober against you, and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon never man sat: loose him, and bring him.

3 And if any man say unto you, Why do ye this? Say ye, that the Lord hath need of him, and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the doore without, in a place where two waies met: and they loose him.

5 And certain of them that stood there, said unto them: What do ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: and they let him go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jesus, and cast the garments on him, and he sat upon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdom of our Father David, that cometh in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the highest.

11 And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple, and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the evening was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

12 And on the morrow when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry. ¶ Mark. 11. 19.

13 And seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might finde any thing thereon:

S. MARK.

on : and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaues : for the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Iesus answered, and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

* Matth.
21.12.

15 ¶ And they come to Jerusalem, and Iesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrow the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves :

16 And would not suffer that any man should carry any vessel thorow the temple.

17 And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations a house of prayer : but ye have made it a den of theebes.

18 And the scribes and chief priests heard : and sought how they might destroy him : for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

* Matth.
21.17.

20 ¶ And in the morning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold the fig-tree which thou cursedst, is withered away.

¶ Or, have
the faith
of God.

22 And Iesus answering, saith unto them, ¶ Verily I say in God.

23 For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed and be thou cast into the sea, and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall beleve that those things which he saith shall come to passe : he shall have whatsoever he saith.

* Matth.
7.7.

24 Therefore I say unto you, ¶ What thing soever ye desire when ye pray beleve that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.

* Matth.
6.14.

25 And when ye stand praying, ¶ Forgive, if ye have ought against any : that your Father also who is in heaven, may forgive you your trespasses.

26 But if you doe not forgive, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Faint

CHAP. XII.

Father which is in heauen forgive your trespasses.

27 And they come again to Ierusalem, * and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders,

28 And say unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority to do these things?

29 And Iesus answered and said unto them, I will also ask of you one || question, and answer me, ^{|| Or. ching.} and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

30 The baptism of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men? answer me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then did ye not beleue him?

32 But if we shall say, Of men, they feared the people: for all men counted Iohn that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they answered, and said unto Iesus, We cannot tell. And Iesus answering, saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

CHAP. XII.

1 The parable of the vineyard 13 Touching the paying of tribute, 18 and the resurrection
-1 The poor widow and her two mites.

And * he began to speak unto them by parables, * ^{March. 21. 33.} A certain man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the wine fat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far countrey.

2 And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away empty.

4 And again he sent unto them another servant, and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And again he sent another, and him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

¶ Having

S. MARK

6 Having yet therefore one son, his wellbelov'd, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my son.

7 But those husbandmen said amongst themselves, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? he will come, and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others.

* Psal.
118. 10.

10 * And have ye not read this scripture? The stone which the builders rejected, is become the head of the corner.

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes.

* Matth.
21. 15.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him: but feared the people, for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him, and went their way.

13 * And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.

14 And when they were come, they say unto him Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the persons of men, but teachest the way of God in truth. Is it lawful to give tribute to Cesar, or not?

I valuing
of our
money
seven
pence
half pe-
ny, as
Matth.
18. 28.
* Matth.
22. 23.

15 Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that I may see.

16 And they brought it: and he saith unto them Whose is this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cessars.

17 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Render to Cesar the things that are Cessars: and to God, the things that are Gods. And they marvelled at him.

18 * Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection, and they ask him, saying,

19 Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a mans brother die, and leave his wife behind him, and he

CHAP XII.

no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

20 Also there were seven brethren : and the first took a wife, and dying, left no seed.

21 And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed, and the third likewise.

22 And the seven had her, and left no seed : last of all the woman died also.

23 In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them ? for the seven had her to wife.

24 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Do ye not therefore erre, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God ?

25 For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage : but are as the angels which are in heaven.

26 And as touching the dead, that they rise : have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

27 He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living : ye therefore do greatly erre.

28 ¶ And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, which is the first commandment of all ?

29 And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord.

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might, and with all thy strength : this is the first commandment.

31 And the second is like, namely, this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self : there is none other commandment greater then these.

32 And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth : for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to love him, with all the heart, and with all

^o Marsh.
22.35.

S. MARK.

all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more then all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question.

* Mark.

4.

35 ¶ And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the Son of David?

36 For David himself said by the holy Ghost, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

37 David therefore himself calleth him Lord, and whence is he then his son? And the common people heard him gladly.

* Mark.

23.5.

38 ¶ And he said unto them in his doctrine, Beware of the scribes, which love to go in long clothing, and love salutations in the market places,

39 And the chief seats in the synagogues, and the uppermost rooms at feasts.

* Mark.

23.14.

40 ¶ Which devour widows houses, and in pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

* Luke

21.1.

¶ A piece of brasse money.

See Mat.

10.9.

¶ It is the

seventh

part of

one piece

of that

brasse

money.

41 ¶ And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast in money: and many that were rich, cast much:

42 And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

43 And he called unto him his disciples, and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more in, then all they which have cast into the treasury.

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance, but she of her want did cast in all that she had, of all her living.

C H A P. XIII

1 The destruction of the temple. 2 Persecuting for the gospel. 14 Great calamities to the Jews. 24 Christs coming to judgement.

CHAP. XIII.

AND as he went out of the temple, one of his ^{* Matth.} Disciples saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings are here.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto him, Seekest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew asked him privately,

4 * Tell us, when shall these things be? and ^{* Matth.} what shall be the signe when all these things shall be fulfilled? ^{24.3.}

5 And Jesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceive you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and shall deceive many.

7 And when ye shall hear of wars, and rumors of wars, be ye not troubled: for such things must needs be, but the end shall not be yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of **||** sorrows.

9 ¶ But take heed to your selves: for they shall deliver you up to councils, and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten, and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.

10 And the gospell must first be published among all nations.

11 * But when they shall lead you, and deliver ^{* Matth.} you up, Take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the holy Ghost. ^{10.19.}

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death, and the father the son: and children shall rise up against their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake:

| The word in the originall, importeth the pains of a woman in travail.

S. MARK.

sake: but he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

* Matth.
24. 15.

14 ¶ But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing where it ought not (let him that readeth, understand) then let them that be in Judea, flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is on the house top, not go down into the house, neither enter therein, to take any thing out of his house.

16 And let him that is in the field, not turn back again for to take up his garment.

17 But wo to them that are with child, and them that give suck in those dayes.

18 And pray ye that your flight be not in winter.

19 For in those dayes shall be affliction, such as was not from the beginning of the creation, which God created, unto this time, neither shall be.

20 And except that the Lord had shortened those dayes, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect sake whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened those dayes.

* Matth.
24. 23.

21 * And then if any man shall say unto you, Behold here is Christ, or lo, he is there: beleue him not.

22 For false Christs, and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the elect.

23 But take ye heed, behold, I have foretold you all things.

* Matth.
24. 29.

24 ¶ But in those dayes, after that tribulation the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light.

25 And the stars of heaven shall fall, and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

26 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds, with great power and glory.

27 And then shall he send his angels, and shall gather together the elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth, to the uttermost part of heaven.

28 Now learn a parable of the fig-tree. When

CHAP. XIII.

her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaues, ye know that summer is near :

29 So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to passe, know that it is nigh, even at the doores.

30 Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not passe, till all things be done.

31 Heaven and earth shall passe away : but my words shall not passe away.

32 ¶ But of that day, and that hour knoweth no man, no not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

33 * Take ye heed, watch and pray : for ye know not when the time is. * Matth. 24.42.

34 For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch :

35 Watch ye therefore, (for ye know not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning.).

36 Lest coming suddenly, he finde you sleeping

37 And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Conspiracy against Christ. 3 A woman poureth ointment on his head, 10 Judas selleth him : 43 betrayeth him : 66 Peter denieth him.

After * two dayes was the feast of the passover, * Matth. 26.2. and of unleavened bread : and the chief priests, and the scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not on the first day, lest there be an uproar of the people.

3 ¶ And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, as he sat at meat, there came a woman having an alabaster box of ointment of * spikenard very precious, and she brake the box, and poured it on his head. * Matth. 26.6. pure nard, liquid nard.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made ?

3. MARK.

¶ See
Matth.
26. 28.)

5 For it might have been sold for more then the hundred pence, and have been given to the poor: and they murmured against her.

6 And Jesus said, Let her alone, why trouble you her? she hath wrought a good work on me.

7 For ye have the poor with you alwayes, on whensoever ye will, ye may do them good: but me ye have not alwayes.

8 She hath done what she could: she is come forth unto anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that she hath done, shall be spoken of for a memorial of her.

* Matth.
26. 14.

10 ¶ And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief priests, to betray him unto them,

11 And when they heard it, they were glad, and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

* Matth.
26. 17.
¶ 18. sa-
crificed.

12 ¶ And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the paschever, his disciples said unto him, Where wilt thou that we go, and prepare that thou mayest eat the paschever?

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go ye into the city, and there ye shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him.

14 And wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good man of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the paschever with my disciples?

15 And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and prepared: there make ready for us.

16 And his disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the paschever.

17 And in the evening he cometh with the twelve.

* Matth.
26. 20.

18 ¶ And as they sat, and did eat, Jesus said Verily I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me, shall betray me.

CHAP. XIII.

19 And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him, one by one, Is it I? And another said, Is it I?

20 And he answered and said unto them, It is one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

21 The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but wo to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: good were it for that man, if he had never been born.

22 ¶ And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, * *Matth.*
and blessed, and brake it, and gave to them, and said, *26. 26.*
Take, eat: This is my body.

23 And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to them: and they all drank of it.

24 And he said unto them, This is my blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an hymn, they *Or,*
went out into the mount of olives. *Psalms.*

27 * And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be
offended because of me this night: for it is written, ** Matth.*
I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be *26. 31.*
scattered.

28 But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

29 * But Peter said unto him, Although all ** Matth.*
shall be offended, yet will not I. *26. 33.*

30 And Jesus saith unto him, Verily, I say unto thee, that this day, even in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 * And they came to a place which was named ** Matth.*
Bethsemani, and he saith to his disciples, Sit ye *26. 36.*
here while I shall pray.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and began to be sore amazed, and to be very heavy.

34 And

S. MARK.

34 And saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death: tarry ye here, and watch.

35 And he went forward a little, and fell on ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, the hour might passe from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee, take away this cup from me: nevertheless not that I will, but what thou wilt.

37 And he cometh and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst not thou watch one hour?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: the spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weak.

39 And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy) neither wist they what to answer him.

41 And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: it is enough, the hour is come, behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise up, let us go, lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

* Matth. 26-17. 43 ¶ And immediately while he yet spake, cometh Judas one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders.

44 And he that betrayed him had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kisse, that man is he: take him and lead him away safely.

45 And as soon as he was come, he goeth straight way to him, and saith, Master, master, and kisseth him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

47 And one of them that stood by, drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

48 And Jesus answered, and said unto them,

C H A P. XIII.

ye come out as against a thief with swords and with staves to take me ?

49 I was daily with you in the temple, teaching, and ye took me not : but the scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsook him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about his naked body, and the young men laid hold on him.

52 And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

53 ¶ And they led Jesus away to the high priest, and with him were assembled all the chief priests, and the elders and the scribes. * Mark 26.57.

54 And Peter followed him afar off, even into the palace of the high priest, and he sat with the servants, and warmed himself at the fire.

55 ¶ And the chief priests, and all the council sought for witness against Jesus to put him to death, and found none : * Mark 26.58.

56 For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together.

57 And there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and within three dayes I will build another made without hands.

59 But neither so did their witness agree together.

60 And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing ? What is it that these witness against thee ?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again, the high priest asked him, and said unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed ?

62 And Jesus said, I am : and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. * Mark 24.30.

63 Then the high priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witnesses ?

64 He have heard the blasphemy: what think ye ? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

S. MARK.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to take his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophesie: and the servants did strike him in the palms of their hands.

* Matth.
26.69.

66 * And as Peter was beneath in the palace there cometh one of the maids of the high priest.

67 And when she saw Peter warming himself she looked upon him, and said, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went in into the porch, And the cock crew.

69 And a maid saw him again, and began to tell to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied him again. And a little after they that stood by, said again to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.

* Matth.
26.75.
Now he
wept a-
bundant-
ly, or, he
began to
weep.

71 But he began to curse and to swear, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speak.

72 * And the second time the cock crew: and Peter called to minde the word that Jesus said to him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice: and when he thought thereon, he wept.

CHAP. XV.

1 Jesus is brought bound, and accused before Pilate, 15 delivered to be crucified, 27 hanging between two thieves, 43 and is honourably buried.

* Matth.
27.1.

And * straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes, and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Jews: and he answering, said unto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chief priests accused him of many things: but he answered nothing:

* Matth.
27.31.

4 * And Pilate asked him again, saying, Answerest thou nothing: behold how many things they witness against thee.

C H A P. XV.

5 But Jesus yet answered nothing: so that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now at that feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire him to do as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

10 (For he knew that the chief priests had belied him for envy.)

11 But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate answered and said again unto them, What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call the king of the Jews?

13 And they cried out again, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 And so Pilate willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the soldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium; and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head,

18 And began to salute him, Hail king of the Jews.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

21 * And they compell one Simon a Cyrenian, * ^{Mark 15:21} who passed by, coming out of the country, the son of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his cross.

22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a skull.

S. MARK.

23 And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrhe : but he received it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots upon them, what every man should take.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

27 And with him they crucified two thieves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, * And he was numbered with the transgressors.

* Isaiah
53.12.

29 And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in thy dayes,

30 Save thy self, and come down from the crosse.

31 Likewise also the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the scribes, He saved others, himself he cannot save.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the crosse, that we may see and beleve : and they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

33 And when the sixth hour was come, there was darknesse over the whole land, until the ninth hour.

* Matth.
27.46.

34 And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, * Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani : which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me ?

35 And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a sponge full of vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying, Let alone, let us see whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost.

C H A P. XVI.

38 And the bail of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom.

39 And when the centurion which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the son of God.

40 There were also women looking on a far off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the lesse, and of Joses, and Salome.

41 Who also when he was in Galilee, * followed * Luke him, and ministered unto him, and many other wo- 24. men which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

42 * And now when the even was come, (be- * Matthe. cause it was the preparaton, that is, the day before 27. 57. the sabbath)

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honorable coun- sellor, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and craved the body of Jesus.

44 And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead, and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead.

45 And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph.

46 And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen, and laid him in a se- pulchre which was hewen out of a rock, and rolled a stone unto the doore of the sepulchre.

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Joses beheld where he was laid.

C H A P. XVI.

1 Christs resurrection. 9 He appeareth to Mary Magdalene and others. 15 He sendeth forth apostles, 19 and ascendeth into heaven.

And when the sabbath was past, Mary Mag- dalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 * And very early in the morning, the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre, at the ri- sing of the sun :

* Luke.
24. 1.
Joh. 20. 1

3. MARK.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the doore of the sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

* John
20.11.

5 * And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted: ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified: he is risen, he is not here; behold the place where they laid him.

* Mark
16.7.

7 But go your way, tell his disciples, and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, * as he said unto you.

8 And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed, neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.

* John
20.14.
* Luke.
8.1.

9 ¶ Now when Jesus was risen early, the first day of the week, * he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, * out of whom he had cast seven devils.

10 And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept.

* Luke
24.13.

11 And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

12 ¶ After that he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

13 And they went and told it unto the rest: neither believed they them.

* Luke
24.36.
John
20.19.
Or, together.
* Mark.

14 ¶ * Afterwards he appeared unto the eleven, as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they believed not them, which had seen him after he was risen.

* Mark.
16.19.
* John
12.48.
* Acts
16.17.
* Acts
17.

15 * And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.

16 He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved, * but he that believeth not, shall be damned.

17 And these signs shall follow them that believe, * in my Name shall they cast out devils, * they shall speak with new tongues.

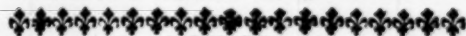
18 * They

CHAP. I.

18 * They shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; * they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. * Acts 28. 3.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, * and sat on the right hand of God, * Luke 24. 31.

20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, * and confirming the word with signs following. Amen. * Hebr. 2. 4.



THE GOSPEL ACCORDING to saint L U K E, CHAP. I.

1 Lukes preface. 5 The conception of John Baptist, 25 and of Christ. 57 The nativity and Circumcision of John.

FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely beleev'd among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

5 ¶ **W**HERE was in the days of Heron the king of Judea, a certain priest, named Zacharias, of the course of Abia, And his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord, blamelesse.

7 And they had no child, because that Elizabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in years:

8 And it came to passe, that while he executed the
F 4 priests

S. LUKE:

priests office before God in the order of his course,
9 According to the custome of the priests office,
his lot was to burn incense when he went into the
temple of the Lord.

* Exod.

20.7.

Levit.

16.17.

10 * And the whole multitude of the people were
praying without at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the
Lord, standing on the right hand of the altar of in-
cense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was trou-
bled, and fear fell upon him.

13 But the angel said unto him, Fear not Za-
charias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Eli-
zabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his
name John.

14 And thou shalt have joy and gladnesse, and
many shall rejoyce at his birth:

15 For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord,
and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink, and
he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, even from his
mothers womb.

* Mal. 4.

2.

16 * And many of the children of Israel shall be
turned to the Lord their God.

Or, by

17 And he shall go before him in the spirit and
power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to
the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of
the just, to make ready a people prepared for the
Lord.

18 And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby
shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my
wife well stricken in years.

19 And the angel answering, said unto him, I
am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God, and
am sent to speak unto thee, and to show thee these
glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able
to speak, untill the day that these things shall be
performed, because thou believest not my words,
which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and
marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speak

unto

CHAP. I.

unto them : and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple : for he beckned unto them, and remained speechlesse.

23 And it came to passe, that as soon as the dayes of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

24 And after those dayes his wife Elizabeth conceived, and hid her self five moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the dayes wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

26 And in the sixth moneth the angel Gabriel was sent from God, unto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgin espoused to a man, whose name was Ioseph, of the house of David; and the virgins name was Mary.

28 And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail thou that art highly favored, the Lord is with thee : blessed art thou among women.

29 And when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her minde what manner of salutation this should be.

30 And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favor with God.

31 * And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Iesus.

32 He shall be great; and shall be called the Son of the Highest, and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David.

33 * And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

34 Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel answered, and said unto her, The holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elizabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age, and this is the

Ps. graci-
ously
accepted
or much
grace!

See verse 30.

* Esay
7. 14.
Matth.
1. 21.

* Dan.
7. 14.
Micah.
4. 7.

5. LUKE.

sixth month with her who was called barren.

37 For with God nothing shall be impossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word: and the angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those dayes, and went in to the hill country with hast, into a city of Iuda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to passe, that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb, and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.

43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

44 For lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.

107.
which
beleeved
that there

45 And blessed is she that beleeved, for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord.

46 And Mary said, My soul doth magnifie the Lord,

47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

48 For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things, and holy is his Name.

* Psalm

50 And his mercy is on them that fear him from generation to generation.

31. 8.

* Psalm

51 * He hath shewed strength with his arm, * he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

23. 10.

* 1 Sam.

2. 6.

* Psalm

52 * He hath put down the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.

34 10.

53 * He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away.

CHAP. I.

54 He hath holpen his servant Israel * in re-
membrance of his mercy.

55 * As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and
to his seed for ever.

56 And Mary abode with her about three
moneths, and returned to her own house.

57 Now Elizabeths full time came, that she
should be deliuered, and she brought forth a son.

58 And her neighbours and her cousins heard
how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her,
and they rejoiced with her.

59 And it came to passe that on the eighth day
they came to circumcise the childe, and they called
him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother answered and said, Not so,
but he shall be called John.

61 And they said unto her, There is none of thy
kindred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signes to his father, how he
would haue him called.

63 And he asked for a writing table, and wrote,
saying, his name is John; and they marvelled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediately, and
his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

65 And fear came on all that dwelt round about
them, and all these sayings were noised abroad
thorowout all the hill countrey of Iudea.

66 And all they that heard them, laid them up in
their hearts, saying, What manner of childe shall
this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with
the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he
hath visited and redeemed his people,

69 * And hath raised up an horn of saluation for
us, in the house of his servant David;

70 * As he spake by the mouth of his holy pro-
phets, which have been since the world began:

71 That we should be saved from our enemies,
and from the hand of all that hate us,

72 To perform the mercy promised to our fa-
thers, and to remember his holy covenant,

* Jer. 31.
3. 10.
* Psal.
132. 10.
Gen 17.
19.

¶ Op.
things.

* Psal.
132. 10.
* Jer. 33.
5. and
30. 9.

S. LUKE.

* Gen.
22.16.

73 * The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,

74 That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear,

75 In holinesse and righteousness, before him all the dayes of our life.

76 And thou childe shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his wayes,

For, for.
bow.
eis of the
mercy.

77 To give knowledge of saluation unto his people // by the remission of their sins.

For, fan-
rising, or,
branch.

78 Through // tender mercy of our God, where-
by the // day spring from on high hath visited us,

Zac. 3. 7.
Isa. 11. 1.
Mal. 4. 2.
Numb.
24. 17.

79 To give light to them that sit in darknesse, and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

80 And the childe grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

CHAP. II.

1 Augustus taxeth all the Romane Empire, 6 Christs nativity: 21 his circumcision, 28 Si-
meon and Anna prophesie of Christ.

AND it came to passe in those dayes, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus that all the world should be // taxed.

For,
enrolled.

2 (And this taxing was first made when Cy-
renius was governour of Syria.)

3 And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city.

* John
2. 4.

4 And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the * city of David, which is called Bethlehem (because he was of the house and lineage of David.)

5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with childe.

6 And so it was, that while they were there, the dayes were accomplished that she should be deli-
vered.

7 And she brought forth her firstborn Son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him

C H A P. II.

in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

8 And there were in the same countrey shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

47- the night-watches.

9 And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them, and they were sore afraid.

10 And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which shall be to all people.

11 For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a signe unto you; ye shall finde the babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the Angel a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God, and saying,

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will towards men.

15 And it came to passe, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to passe, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had seen it, they made known abroad the saying, which was told them concerning this child.

18 And all they that heard it, wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds.

19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered them in her heart.

20 And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

21 * And when eight dayes were accomplished ** Gen. 17. 12.* for the circumcision of the child, his name was called * Jesus, which was so named of the angel ** Matthe. 1. 21.* before he was conceived in the womb.

22 And

S. LUKE.

22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord.

23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, * Every male that openeth the womb, shall be called holy to the Lord)

* Exod.
13.2.
Num. 18.
16.
* Levit.
22.2,6.

24 And to offer a sacrifice, according to * the which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon, and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the holy Ghost was upon him.

26 And it was revealed unto him by the holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lords Christ.

27 And he came by the spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custome of the law,

28 Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,

29 Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace, according to thy word:

30 For mine eyes have seen thy salvation.

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people:

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.

* Isay 8.
14.
Rom. 9.
32.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for thy fall and rising again of many in Israel: and for a signe which shall be spoken against,

35 (Yea, a sword shall pierce throught thy own soul also) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

36 And there was one Anna a prophetesse, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven yeers from her virginity.

CHAP. II:

37 And she was a widow of about fourscore & four years: which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she coming in at that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem. 39. 11
Israel.

39 And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.

40 And the childe grew and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was upon him.

41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem ^{Deut.} the yearly feast of the Passover. 16. 1.

42 And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem, after the custom of the feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as they returned, the childe Jesus tarried behinde in Jerusalem, and Joseph and his mother knew not of it.

44 But they supposing him to have been in the company, went a dayes journey, and they sought him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe, that after three dayes they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him, were astonished at his understanding and answers.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed, and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my fathers business?

50 And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

51 And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And

S. LUKE.

10r. age. 52 And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favor with God and man.

C H A P. III.

1 Johns preaching and baptism. 15 his testimony of Christ. 20 Herod imprisoneth him.

21 Christ is baptized. 23 His genealogie.

NOW in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

* Matth. 3.1. — 3 * And he came into all the countrey about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins,

* Mai. 40.3. 4 As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, * The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

5 Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low, and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough waves shall be made smooth.

6 And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

* Matth. 3.7. — 7 Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, * O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits || worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within your selves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

9 And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

* Jam. 2.15. — 11 He answereth, and saith unto them * We that have two coats, let him impart to him that hath none,

* John 3.17.

C H A P. III.

neither, and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

12 Then came also Publicanes to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

13 And he said unto them, Exact no more then that which is appointed you.

14 And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? and he said unto them, ¶ Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.

15 And as the people were in expectation, and all men marvelled in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not;

16 John answered, saying unto them all. * I indeed baptize you with water, but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire:

17 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner, but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

19 * But Herod the tetrarch being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

20 Added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, * it came to passe that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli,

24 Which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi, which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Anna, which was the son of Joseph,

25 Which

For, put
no man
in fear.
For, a
lowance.
For, in
suspence.
For, rea-
soned, &
d. bated.
* Matth.
3. 11.

* Matth.
14. 3.

* Matth.
3. 13.

3. LUKE.

25 Which was the son of Matthathias, which was the son of Amos, which was the son of Maum, which was the son of Elz, which was the son of Nagge,

26 Which was the son of Maath, which was the son of Matthathias, which was the son of Sime, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Juda,

27 Which was the son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhela, which was the son of Zozobabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which was the son of Deri,

28 Which was the son of Melchi, which was the son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the son of Elnodan, which was the son of Er,

29 Which was the son of Jole, which was the son of Eliezer, which was the son of Jozim, which was the son of Matthat, which was the son of Levi,

30 Which was the son of Simeon, which was the son of Juda, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son of Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim,

31 Which was the son of Melea, which was the son of Menam, which was the son of Mattath, which was the son of Nathan, which was the son of David,

32 Which was the son of Jesse, which was the son of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of Salmon, which was the son of Naalon,

33 Which was the son of Aminadab, which was the son of Aram, which was the son of Elrom, which was the son of Phares, which was the son of Juda,

34 Which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of Thara, which was the son of Nachor,

35 Which was the son of Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of Phaleg,

CHAP. IIII.

leg, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of Sala,

36 Which was the son of Cainan, which was the son of Arphaxad, which was the son of Sem, which was the son of Noe, which was the son of Lamech,

37 Which was the son of Mathusala, which was the son of Enoch, which was the son of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was the son of Lamech,

38 Which was the son of Enos, which was the son of Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of God.

CHAP. IIII

1 Christs temptation and fasting 13 He overcome the devil, 14 he beginneth to preach.
16 They of Nazareth admire him

AND * Jesus being full of the holy Ghost, re-^{* Math.}
turned from Jordan, and was led by the spirit ^{4.1.}
into the wilderness,

2 Being fourty dayes tempted of the devil, and in those dayes he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

3 And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread.

4 And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, that man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

5 And the devil taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time.

6 And the devil said unto him. All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will, I give it.

7 If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.

8 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behinde me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serve.

9 And

10. Fall
down be-
fore me,

3. LUKE:

9 And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thy self down from hence:

10 For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee:

11 And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Jesus answering, said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

14 And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him throughout all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

* Matth.
23.54.

16 And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up, and as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up for to read.

17 And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet *Isaias*, and when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

* *Isaias*.
61.1.

18 * The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor, he hath sent me to heal the broken hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised,

19 To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

20 And he closed the book, and he gave it again to the minister, and sat down: and the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him.

21 And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears.

22 And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Josephs son?

23 And he said unto them, He will surely say so.

CHAP. II II.

to me this proverb, Physician, heal thy self: what-
soever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also
here in thy countrey.

24 And he said, Verily I say unto you, No * pro- * Mat. 13. 57.
phet is accepted in his own countrey. * 1 Kings 17. 9.

25 But I tell you of a truth, * Many widows
were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the hea-
ven was shut up three yeeres and six moneths, when
great famine was throughout all the land:

26 But unto none of them was Elias sent, save
unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that
was a widow.

27 * And many lepers were in Israel in the time * 2 Kings 5. 14.
of Elizeus the prophet: and none of them was
cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

28 And all they in the Synagogue, when they
heard these things, were filled with wrath,

29 And rose up, and thrust him out of the city,
and led him unto the brow of the hill, (whereon
their city was built) that they might cast him down
headlong.

30 But he passing through the midst of them, went
his way:

31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Ga-
lilee, and taught them on the sabbath-dayes.

32 And they were astonished at his doctrine: * for * Mat. 7. 29.
his word was with power. * Mark 1. 23,

33 * And in the Synagogue there was a man
which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and cryed out
with a loud voice,

34 Saying, Let us alone, what have we to do
with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth: art thou come
to destroy us: I know thee who thou art, the holy
one of God. away.

35 And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy
peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had
thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and
hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and spake among
themselves, saying, What a word is this: for with
authority and power he commandeth the unclean
spirits, and they come out.

37 And

3. LUKE.

37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

* Mark.
8.14.

38 ¶ And he arose out of the synagogue, and entered into Simons house: and Simons wifes mother was taken with a great feber, and they besought him for her.

39 And he stood over her, and rebuked the feber, and it left her. And immediately she arose and ministered unto them.

40 ¶ Now when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.

* Mark
7.34.
35.20
say that
they
knew
him to
be Christ

41 ¶ And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he rebuking them, suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ.

42 And when it was day, he departed, and went into a desert place: and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them.

43 And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also: for therefore am I sent.

44 And he pleased in the synagogues of Galilee.

CHAP. V.

1 Christ reacheth out of the ship 4 A Miraculous draught of fishes, 11 The leper cleansed, 18 The palsie healed. 27 Matthew called.

* Mark.
4.18.

¶ And it came to passe, that as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Genesareth,

2 And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

3 And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simons, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land: and he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

C H A P. V.

5 And Simon answering, said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless, at thy word I will let down the net.

6 And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes, and their net brake.

7 And they beckned unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they would come and help them. And they came and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, he fell down at Jesus knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinful man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken.

10 And so was also James and John the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, fear not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him.

12 ¶ And it came to passe, when he was in a certain city, behold a man full of leprosie, who seeing Jesus, fell on his face, and besought him saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. * Marke
8.2.

13 And he put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will: be thou clean. And immediately the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go and shew thy self to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 ¶ And he withdrew himself into the wilderness and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and Doctours of the law sitting by, which were come out of

3. LUKE.

of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heal them.

* Matth.
9.2.

18 ¶ And behold, men brought in a bed on which was taken with a palsy: and they sought means to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not finde by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude they went upon the house top, and let him down thro' the tiling with his couch into the midst before Jesus.

20 And when he saw their faith, he said unto him, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.

21 And the Scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, What is this which speaketh blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God alone?

22 But when Jesus perceived their thoughts, answering, said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee: or to say, Rise up and walk?

24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power upon earth to forgive sins, (he said unto the sick of the palsy) I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into thine house.

25 And immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to day.

* Matth.
9.9.

27 ¶ And after these things they went forth, and saw a publican, named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custome: and he said unto him, Follow me.

28 And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

29 And Levi made him a great feast in his own house: and there was a great company of publicans, and of others that lay down with them.

30 But the Scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners?

CHAP. VI.

31 And Jesus answering, said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician, but they that are sick.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

33 ¶ And they said unto him, * Why to the disci- * March. 9. 14.
ples of John fast often, and make prayers, and like-
wise the disciples of the Pharisees: but thine eat
and drink?

34 And he said unto them, Can ye make the chil-
dren of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom
is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, when the bride-
groom shall be taken away from them, and then
shall they fast in those dayes.

36 ¶ And he spake also a parable unto them, No
man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old:
if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and
the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth
not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bot-
tles: else the new wine would burst the bottles, and
be spilled, and the bottles shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottles,
and both are preserved.

39 No man also having drunk old wine, straight-
way desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

CHAP. VI.

I Touching the ears of corn that were plucked by
the disciples on the sabbath. 13 Christ chuseth
the twelve. 17 He healeth, 20 and preacheth.

AND * it came to passe on the second sabbath * March. 12. 1.
after the first, that he went throught the corn
fields: and his disciples plucked the ears of corn,
and did eat, rubbing them in their hands.

2 And certain of the Pharisees said unto them,
why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the
sabbath-dayes?

3 And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not
read so much as this, what David do, when him-
self was an hungred, & they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did

5. LUKE.

take and eat the Jews bread, - and gave also to them that were with him, which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests alone?

5 And he said unto them, That the Son of man is lord also of the sabbath.

* Matth.
12.2.

6 * And it came to passe also on another sabbath, that he entred into the synagogue and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath: - day that they might finde an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst, and he arose and stood forth.

9 Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing, Is it lawful on the sabbath-dayes to do good, or to do evil: to save life, or to destroy it?

10 And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: & his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madness, and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

13 * And when it was day, he called unto his disciples: * and of them he chose twelve; whom also he named apostles:

* Matth.
10.1.

14 Simon, (whom he also named Peter) and Andrew his brother: James and John, Philip and Bartholomew.

15 Matthew and Thomas, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon called Zelotes,

16 And Judas * the brother of James, and Judas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.

* Jude 1.

17 * And he came down with them, and stood in the plain, and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judaea and Jerusalem, and from the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon,

Sider,

CHAP. VI.

Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases.

18 And they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed,

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed them all.

20 ¶ And he lift up his eyes on his disciples, and said, * Blessed be ye poor: for yours is the king-
dom of God. * Math. 5. 3.

21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.

22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of mans sake.

23 Reioyce ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward is great in Heauen: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

24 * But woe unto you that are rich: for ye have received your consolation. * Amos 6. 1.

25 * Woe unto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourn and weep. * Math. 6. 12.

26 Woe unto you when all men shall speak well of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

27 ¶ But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you; * Math. 5. 44.

28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.

29 * And unto him that smiteth thee on the one cheek, offer also the other: * and him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid not to take thy coat also. * Math. 5. 39. 1 Cor. 7.

30 Give to every one that asketh of thee, and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask them not again.

31 * And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. * Math. 7. 12.

32 * For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. Tob. 4. 16. * Math. 5. 46.

S. LUKE.

33 And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same.

* Matth.
14.

34 * And if ye lend to them of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive so much again.

35 But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again: and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankfull, and to the evil.

* Matth.
7.1.

36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father also is mercifull.

37 * Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven.

38 Give, and it shall be given unto you, good measure pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosome: for with the same measure that ye mete withall, it shall be measured to you again.

* Matth.
13.14.

39 And he spake a parable unto them; * Can the blinde lead the blinde? shall they not both fall into the ditch?

* Matth.
10.24.
10.25.
shall be
perle.
As as
his ma-
ster.

40 * The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect, shall be as his master.

41 * And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye?

* Matth.
7.3.

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye: when thou thy self beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brothers eye.

* Matth.
16.

43 * For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

44 For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush gather they grapes.

CH A P. VII.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

46 ¶ And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do ^{• Matth.} not the things which I say? 7.21.

47 Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doth them, I will shew him to whom he is like.

48 He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep and laid the foundation on a rock. And when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock.

49 But he that heareth, and doth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth: against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.

CH A P. VII.

1 The centurions faith: 10 Christ healeth his servant, being absent: 11 prayeth the widows for 24 Christs testimony of he.

NOW when he had ended all his sayings in the ^{• Matth.} audience of the people, * he entered into Ca- 8.25.
pernaum.

2 And a certain centurions servant, who was dear unto him, was sick and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant.

4 And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, that he was worthy for whom he should do this.

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue.

6 Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof.

5. LUKE.

7 Wherefore neither thought I my self worthy to come unto thee : but say in a word , and my servant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set under authority, being under me soldiers : and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth : and to another, Come, and he cometh : and to my servant, Do this, and he doth it.

9 When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that he went into a city, called Naim : and many of his disciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow : and much people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the bier (and they that bare him stood still.) And he said, Young man, arise.
12. col. 2.

15 And he that was dead, sat up, and began to speak : and he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all, and they glorified in God, saying, that a great prophet is risen up among us. and that God hath visited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 ¶ And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things.
* Math. 23. 31. 32.

19 ¶ And John calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another ?

20 When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come, or look we for another ?

21 And in that same hour he cured many of their

C H A P. VII.

their infirmities and plagues, and of evil spirits, and unto many that were blinde he gave sight.

22 Then Jesus answering, said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard, how that the blinde see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in me.

34 And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John: What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? a reed shaken with the winds?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings courts.

26 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.

27 This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say unto you, Among these that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God, is greater than he.

29 And all the people that heard him, and the Publicanes justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.

30 But the Pharisees and Scribes rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

31 And the Lord said, "whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation: and to what are they like?"

32 They are like unto children sitting in the market place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced: we have mourned to you and ye have not wept.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine, and ye say, He hath a devil.

10. frim.
Arched.
Or,
within
the m-
selves.
" Minah.
11. 16.

S. LUKE.

34 The Son of man is come, eating and drinking, and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and wine-bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners.

35 But wisdom is justified of all her children.

* Mark

14.3

35 ¶ And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisees house, and sat down to meat.

37 And behold, a woman in the city which was a sinner, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisees house, brought an alabaster box of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behind him weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe them with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known, both, and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering, said unto Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, go on.

¶ See
Matth.
23.18.

41 There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors: the one ought five hundred pence, and the other fifty.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most?

43 Simon answered, and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head.

45 Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet.

46 Mine head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Where-

C H A P. VIII.

47 Therefore I say unto thee, Her sins which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

48 And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven.

49 And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee, go in peace.

C H A P. VIII.

3 Women minister to Christ. 4 The parable of the sower, 16 and of the sandle. 26 The legion of devils.

As it came to passe afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching, and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve were with him.

2 And certain woman which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary, called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils,

^{* Mark.}
14-9

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herods steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

4 ^{* Mark.} And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: ^{13-2.}

5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and it was troden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And some fell upon a rock, and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture.

7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundred fold. And when he had said these things, he cryed, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be?

10 And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to others

S. LUKE.

in parables, that seeing they might not see; and hearing, they might not understand.

* Matth.
13.35.

11 * Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God.

12 Those by the way-side, are they that hear: then cometh the Devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved.

13 They on the rock, are they, which when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns, are they, which when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares, and riches, and pleasures of this life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

* Matth.
21.5.

16 ¶ * No man when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed: but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in, may see the light.

17 * For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be known, and come abroad.

18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: * for whatsoever hath, to him shall be given: and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken, even that which he seemeth to have.

19 ¶ * Then came to him his mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press.

20 And it was told him by certain, which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.

21 And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

22 ¶ * Now it came to passe on a certain day, that he went into a ship with his disciples: and he said unto them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake; and they launched forth.

23 But as they sailed, he fell asleep, and there

* Matth.
8.23.

¶ Or,
thinkers
that he
had said
* Matth.
12.46.

came

C H A P. VIII.

came down a storm of winde on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he arose, and rebuked the winde and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calm.

25 And he said unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this? for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

26 ¶ And they arrived at the country of the Gadarens, which is over against Galilee. * Mat 8.28.

27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man, which had devils long time, and wore no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombs.

28 When he saw Jesus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man: for oftentimes it had caught him, and he was kept bound with chains, and in fetters: and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderness.)

30 And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entered into him.

31 And they besought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine feeding on the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them: and he suffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed them saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city, and in the country.

35 Then they went out to see what was done,

S. LUKE.

and came to Jesus, and found the man, out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right minde; and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw it, told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils, was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarens round about, besought him to depart from them, for they were taken with great fear: and he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him: but Jesus sent him away, saying,

39 Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Jesus was returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him.

91.
*Matth.

41 ¶ And behold, there came a man, named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagoge, and he fell down at Jesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had one onely daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying. (But as he went, the people thronged him.)

43 ¶ And a woman having an issue of blood twelve yeers, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behinde him, and touched the hem of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stancheth.

45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? ¶ They all denied, Peter, and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and press thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said, Some body hath touched me, for I perceive that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid,

CHAP. IX.

his, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, go in peace.)

49 ¶ While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogues house, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the master.

50 But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying, Fear not, beleeve onely, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father, and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept and bewailed her: but he said, Weep not, she is not dead, but sleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and took her by the hand, and called, saying, Maid, arise.

55 And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway: and he commanded to give her meat.

56 And her parents were astonished: but he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

CHAP. IX.

1 Christ sendeth forth his apostles. 7 Herod desired to see Christ. 18 The transfiguration. 37 The lunatick.

Then * he called his twelue disciples together, * Matth. 10.1.
and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

3 And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money, neither have two coats apiece.

4 And whosoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.

5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go

S. L U K E.

go out of that city, shake of the very dust from your feet, for a testimony against them.

6 And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, and healing every where.

* Matth.
14.10.

7 ¶ Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead.

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

9 And Herod said, John have I beheaded: but who is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him.

* Matth.
24.13.

10 ¶ And the apostles, when they were returned, told him all that they had done. * And he took them, and went aside privately into a desert place, belonging to the city, called Bethsaida.

11 And the people when they knew it, followed him, and he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing.

* Mat.
14.15.

12 * And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve, and said unto him, Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and get victuals: for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said unto them, Give ye them to eat, And they said, We have no more but five loaves and two fishes, except we should go and buy meat for all this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and made them all sit down.

16 Then he took the five loaves & the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake, and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eat, and were all filled. And there was taken up of fragments that remained to them, twelve baskets.

18 ¶ And

C H A P. IX

13 ¶ And it came to passe, as he was alone * Match. 16.13.
 praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked
 them saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They answering, said John the Baptist: but
 some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old
 prophets is risen again.

20 He said unto them, But whom say ye that I
 am? Peter answering, said, The Christ of God.

21 And he straitly charged them, and command-
 ed them to tell no man that thing.

22 Saying, * The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief
 priests, and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the
 third day. * Match. 17.22.

23 ¶ And he said to them all, ¶ If any man will * Match. 10.36.
 come after me, let him deny himself, and take up
 his crosse daily, and follow me.

24 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it;
 but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the
 same shall save it.

25 * For what is a man advantaged, if he gain * Match. 10.25.
 the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

26 * For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and * Match. 10.23.
 of my words, of him shall the Son of man be asha-
 med when he shall come in his own glory, and in
 his fathers, and of the holy angels.

27 * But I tell you of a truth, there be some * Match. 16.18.
 standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they
 see the kingdom of God.

28 ¶ And it came to passe about an eight * Match. 17.1.
 dayes after these sayings, he took Peter, and
 John, and James, and went up into a mountain to
 pray. * Or, things.

29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his counte-
 nance was altered, and his raiment was white and
 glistering.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men,
 which were Moses and Elias,

31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his de-
 cease, which he should accomplish at Jerusalem

32 But Peter, and they that were with him,
 were heavy with sleep: and when they were
 awake,

S L U K E.

awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to passe, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.

34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud and overshadowed them, and they feared as they entered into the cloud.

35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son, hear him.

36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone: and they kept it close, and told no man in those dayes, any of those things which they had seen.

* Matth. 17.14. 37 ¶ And it came to passe that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him.

38 And behold a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee look upon my son, for he is mine only childe.

39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and it teareth him, that he cometh again, and bruising him hardly departeth from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out, and they could not.

41 And Jesus answering said, O faithlesse and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you, and suffer you? bring thy son hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare him: and Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the childe, and delivered him again to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God: but while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus did, he said unto his disciples,

* Matth. 23. 44 ¶ Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered into the hands of men.

45 But they understood not this saying, and it was

CHAP. IX.

was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to ask him of that saying.

46 ¶ Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest. * Mark.
(8.1.)
Mark.
9.34.

47 And Jesus perceiving the thought of their heart, took a childe, and set him by him.

48 And said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this childe in my Name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

49 ¶ And John answered, and said, Master, * Mark
9.38. we saw one casting out devils in thy Name, and we forbade him, because he followed not with us.

50 And Jesus said unto him, forbid him not: for he that is not against us, is for us.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem,

52 And sent messengers before his face, and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritanes to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem.

54 And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as * Elias did? * Kings
1.10.

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of.

56 For the Son of man is not come to destroy mens lives, but to save them. And they went to another village.

57 ¶ And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. * Mark.
8.19.

58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests, But the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 ¶ And he said unto another, Follow me: but * Mark.
8.21. he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. 8.21.

S. LUKE.

60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury the dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.

62 And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

CHAP. X.

The seventy disciples 17 admonished to be humble. 24 Martha reprehended, and Mary commended.

* Matth.
24. 14.

After these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself would come.

* Matth.
9. 37

2 Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few; pray therefore the Lord of the harvest that he would send forth labourers into his harvest.

* Matth.
10. 16.

3 Go your way: Behold I send you forth as lambs among wolves.

4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes, and salute no man by the way.

* Matth.
24. 11.

5 And into whatsoever house ye enter, say, Peace be to this house.

6 And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.

7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you:

9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your wayes out into the streets of the same and say,

11 Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth

C H A P. X.

on us, we be wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, then for that city.

13 * Who unto thee Chorazin, who unto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgement, then for you.

15 And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

16 * He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy Name.

18 And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.

19 Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the devils are subject unto you: but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

21 In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes; even so Father, for so it seemed good in thy light.

22 All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father: and who the Father is, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him.

23 And he turned him unto his Disciples, and said privately, * Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see.

* Matth. 11. 21.

* Matth. 10. 40.

Many ancient copies add these words, And turning to his Disciples, he said. * Matth. 13. 16.

3. LUKE.

24 For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them: and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.

25 And he told a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him saying, * Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him.

26 What is written in the law? How readest thou?

27 And he answering, said, Thou shalt love thy Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind, and thy neighbour as thy self.

28 And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

29 But he willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour?

30 And Jesus answering, said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead.

31 And by chance there came down a certain priest that way, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certain Samaritane, as he journeyed, came where he was; and when he saw him, he had compassion on him,

34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him.

35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him, and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkst thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves?

* Matth.
22, 37, 8

¶ See
Matth.
20, 1.

CHAP. XI.

37 And he said, He that sheweth mercy on him,
Then said Iesus unto him, So, and so thou like-
wise

38 ¶ Now it came to passe as they went, that he
entered into a certain village: and a certain woman
named Martha, receiued him into her house.

39 And she had a sister called Mary, which also
sat at Iesus feet, and heard his word:

40 But Martha was cumbered about much ser-
uing, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not
care that my sister hath left me to serue alone? bid
her therefore that she help me.

41 And Iesus answered and said unto her, Mar-
tha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about
many things:

42 But one thing is needful, and Mary hath
chosen that good part, which shall not be taken a-
way from her,

CHAP. XI.

1 Christ teacheth to pray instantly: 14 he cast-
eth out a dumb deuill. 29 He preacheth to the
people, 37 and reproveth the Pharisees, scribes
and lawyers.

AND it came to passe, that as he was praying
in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his
disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as
John also taught his disciples.

2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say,
Our Father which art in heauen, Hallowed be thy
Name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done as
in heauen, so in earth.

3 Give us day by day our daily bread.

4 And forgive us our sins: for we also forgive
every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not
into temptation, but deliver us from evil.

5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall
have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight,
and say unto him? Friend, lend me three loaves,

6 For a friend of mine is in his journey is come
to me, and I have nothing to set before him.

7 And he from within shall answer and say,
Trouble me not, the doo is now shut, and my chil-

open

S LUKE.

men are with me in bed: I cannot rise & give thee.

8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunity, he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

* Matth.
2.7.

9 * And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you: seek, and ye shall finde: knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

10 For every one that asketh, receiveth: and he that seeketh, findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

* Matth.
7.9.

11 * If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent?

12 Or if he shall ask an egge, will he offer him a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that ask him?

14 And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to passe when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake and the people wondered.

* Matth.
9.34. and
12.14.

15 But some of them said, * He casteth out devils through Beelzebub the chief of the devils;

16 And when he tempteth him, saught of him: Agn from heaven.

17 But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against it self is brought to desolation: and a house divided against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say, that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your Judges.

20 But if I with the finger of Gods cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of Gods is come upon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

22 But when a stronger than he shall come upon him,

him
are
2
the
ma
fin
lab
gar
2
Spi
awo
woy
2
thin
be
that
such
1
hear
29
toge
tion
give
30
blas
ratio
31
judg
cand
of th
behol
32
men
for th
behol
33
trb h
but o
see th
24

C H A P. VI.

him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

23 He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 * When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh thorow dry places seeking rest and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. * Matth. 12.43.

25 And when he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked then himself, and they enter in, and dwell there; and the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 ¶ And it came to passe as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lift up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps, which thou hast sucked.

28 But he saith, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

29 ¶ * And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation, they seek a signe, and there shall no signe be given it, but the signe of Jonas the prophet: * Matth. 12.38.

30 For as Jonas was a signe unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

31 The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold a greater then Solomon is here.

32 The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

33 * No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. * Matth. 5.15.
¶ See Matth. 5.15.
* Matth. 6.22.

34 * The light of the body is the eye: therefore when

S. LUKE:

when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when thine eye is evil, the body also is full of darknesse.

35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darknesse.

36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

* Math.
23.25.

39 * And the Lord said unto him. Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter: but your inner part is full of ravening and wickednesse.

40 Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

10. as
you are
able.

41 But rather give alms of such things as ye have: and behold, all things are clean unto you.

42 But woe unto you, Pharisees: for ye tithe mint and rue, and all manner of herbs, and pay tithes upon judgement, and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

* Math.
23.5.

43 * Woe unto you, Pharisees: for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as graves which appear clean, but the men that walk over them, are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the scribes, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also.

* Math.
23.4.

46 * And he said, Woe unto you also, ye scribes: for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye your selves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

* Math.
23.47.

47 * Woe unto you: for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 ¶

CHAP. XII.

48 Traly ye hear witness that ye allow the
seeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them,
and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I
will send them prophets, and apostles, and some of
them they shall slay and persecute:

50 That the blood of all the prophets, which
was shed from the foundation of the world, may be
required of this generation.

51 From the blood of Abel, unto the blood of ^{Gen. 4}
Zacharias which perished between the altar and
the temple: Verily I say unto you, it shall be re-
quired of this generation.

52 Wo unto you lawyers; for ye have taken ^{March. 22. 13.}
away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in your
selves, and them that were entering in, ye hindered. ^{Or, forbade.}

53 And as he said these things unto them, the
scribes and the Pharisees began to urge him ve-
hemently, and to provoke him to speak of many
things:

54 Laying wait for him, and seeking to catch
something out of his mouth, that they might accuse
him.

CHAP. XII.

1 To avoid hypocrisie and fearfulness in publish-
ing Christs doctrine. 13 To beware of covet-
ousnesse. 41 The faithful and wise steward.

In the mean time, when there were gathered to-
gether an innumerable multitude of people, in-
somuch that they trode one upon another, he began
to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of
the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

2 For there is nothing covered that shall not ^{March. 10. 26.}
be revealed, neither hid that shall not be known.

3 Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in dark-
nesse, shall be heard in the light: and that which ye
have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed
upon the house tops.

4 And I say unto you, my friends, Be not ^{March. 13.}
afraid of them that kill the body, and after that
have no more that they can do.

5 But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear:

S. LUKE.

Fear him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell, yea, I say unto you, Fear him.

¶ See
Matth.
10. 29.

6 Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

7 But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered: fear not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparrows.

• Matth.
23. 31.
• Tim.
2. 12.

8 • Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confesse me before men, him shall the Son of man also confesse before the angels of God.

9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God.

10 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

• Matth.
23. 19.

11 • And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, what ye shall say:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother that he divide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said unto him, Man, who made me judge, or a divider over you.

15 And he said unto them, Take heed and beware of covetousnesse: for a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully.

17 And he thought within himself, saying, This shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do, I will pull down my barns, and build greater, and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many yeers, take thine ease, drink, and be merry.

C H A P. XII.

20 But God said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?

16r. do
they re-
quire th
soul.

21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich towards God.

22 And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, * Take no thought for your life what ye shall eat, neither for the body what ye shall put on. * Matth.
6.25.

23 The life is more then meat, and the body is more then raiment.

24 Consider the ravens, for they neither sow, nor reap, which neither have store-house, nor barn, and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better then the fowls?

25 And which of you with taking thought, can add to his stature one cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

27 Consider the lillies how they grow, they toil not, they spin not: and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe y grace, which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the oven: how much more will he clothe you, O ye of little faith?

29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful minde.

30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. 16r. How
not in
careful
sufficiency.

31 But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added unto you.

32 Fear not, little flock; for it is your Fathers good pleasure to give you the kingdom.

33 Sell that ye have, and give alms, * provide your selves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. * Matth.
6.20.

34 For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

35 Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning, * 1 Pet. 3.
13.

5. LUKE.

36 And ye your selves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding, that when he cometh, and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.

37 Blessed are those servants, whom the Lord when he cometh shall finde watching. Verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them.

38 And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and finde them so, blessed are those servants.

* Matth.
24. 43.

39 * And this know, that if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through.

40 Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speak thou this parable unto us, or even to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

43 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh, shall finde so doing.

44 Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath.

45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to be the men-servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken:

46 The lord of that servant will come in an hour when he looketh not for him, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers.

for, and;
him off;

47 And that servant which knew his lords will, and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48 But he that knoweth not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him

C H A P. XIII.

be much required; and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

49 **I** am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished?

51 ^{12.} Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay, but rather division. ^{pained.}

52 For from henceforth there shall be sive in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. ^{Mark 10.34.}

53 The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 **A**nd he said also to the people, ^{Mark 13.2} When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a storm, and so it is.

55 And when ye see the south winde blow, ye say, There will be heat, and it cometh to passe.

56 Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, and of the earth: but how is it that ye do not discern this time?

57 Yea, and why even of your selves judge ye not what is right?

58 **W**hen thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, as thou art in the way, give diligence ^{Mark 5.25.} that thou mayst be delivered from him: lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison.

59 I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till ^{See Mark 13.32.} thou hast paid the very last mite.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Chr. R. preacheth repentance upon the punishment of the Chaldeans, and others. 6 The fig-tree cursed. 24 The strait gate.

There were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all

S. LUKE.

the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 O those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloe fell, and slew them; think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwell in Jerusalem?

8 Or.
debetis.

5 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable: A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and he came, and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and finde none: cut it down, why cumbereth it the ground?

8 And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it:

9 And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up her self.

12 And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thy infirmity.

13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six dayes in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day.

15 The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, both not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox, or his asse from the stall, and lead him away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen

CHAP. XIII.

eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day.

17 And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 ¶ Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it? * Matth.
13.33.

19 It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and beared a great tree: and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened. [13] Matth.
13.33.

22 * And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying towards Jerusalem. * Matth.
9.35.

23 Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them,

24 ¶ Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. * Matth.
7.28.

25 When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us, and he shall answer, and say unto you, I know you not whence you are.

26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets.

27 * But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence you are; depart from me all ye workers of iniquity. * Matth.
7.23.

28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and you yourselves thrust out.

29 And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.

30 * And behold, there are last, which shall be first; * Matth.
19.30.

S. LUKE.

first; and there are first, which shall be last.

31 ¶ The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Set thee out, and depart hence; for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

33 Beherethelise, I must walk to day and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

• Math.
23.37.

34 ¶ Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under her wings, and ye would not?

35 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. And verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, till the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The dropsie healed on the sabbath. 15 The parable of the great supper. 25 who cannot be Christs disciples.

AS it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that they watched him.

2 And behold, there was a certain man before him, which had the dropsie.

3 And Jesus answering, spake unto the scribes, and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day?

4 And they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go.

5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day?

6 And they could not answer him again to these things.

7 ¶ And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms, saying unto them,

CHAP. XIII.

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room: lest a more honorable man than thou be bidden of him,

9 And he that hath thee and him, come and say to thee, Give this man place: and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room.

10 * But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room, that when he that hath thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. * Prov. 25. 9.

11 * For whosoever exalteth himself, shall be abased: and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. * Matth. 23. 12.

12 ¶ Then said he also to him that hath him When thou makest a dinner, or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbors, lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee.

13 But when thou makest a feast, call * the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind, * Tob. 4. 7.

14 And thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

15 ¶ And when one of them that sat at meat with him, heard these things, he said unto him, * Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. * Revel. 3. 19. 9.

16 * Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and had many: * Matth. 22. 2.

17 And sent his servant at supper time, to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready.

18 And they all with one consent began to make excuse: the first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prob them: I pray thee have me excused.

20 And another said I have married a wife: and therefore I cannot come.

21 ¶ That servant came and shewed his lord these

these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt and the blinde.

22 And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the high-wayes and hedges, and compel them to come in that my house may be filled.

24 For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them,

* Math.
23.37.

26 * If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

27 And whosoever doth not bear his crosse, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a tower sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it.

29 Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin to mock him,

30 Saying, this man began to build, and was not able to finish.

31 Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an embassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you, that taketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

* Math.
23.12.

34 ¶ Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his savor, wherewith shall it be seasoned?

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghil: but men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

C H A P. XV.

3 The parable of the lost sheep. 8 of the piece of silver, 11 of the prodigal son.

Then drew neer unto him all the publicanes and sinners for to hear him.

2 And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

3 And he spake this parable unto them, saying,

4 * What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he finde it?

* March, 18. 12.

5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders rejoycing.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoyce with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost.

7 I say unto you y^e likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more then over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

8 ¶ Either what woman having ten ℥ pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she finde it?

1 Drachma here translated a piece of silver, is the eight part of an ounce, which cometh to seven pence halfpenny and is equal to the Roman penny, Mat. 18. 18.

9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoyce with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God, over one sinner that repenteth.

11 ¶ And he said, A certain man had two sons:

12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living.

13 And not many dayes after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far countrey, and there wasted his substance with riotous living.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a

S. LUKE.

mighty famine in that land, and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joyued himself to a citizen of that countrey, and he lent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat : and no man gave unto him.

17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my fathers have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger ?

18 I will arise, and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father I have sinned against heaven and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son : make me as one of thy hired servants.

20 And he arose, and came to his Father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran and fell on his neck, and kissed him.

21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son.

22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet.

23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us eat and be merry.

24 For this my son was dead, & is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder son was in the field, and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing.

26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound.

28 And he was angry, and would not go in : wherefore came his father out, and entreated him.

29 And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many

C H A P. XVI.

many years do I serue thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment, and yet thou never gapest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends :

30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.

31 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.

32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad : for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again : and was lost, and is found.

C H A P. XVI.

1 Of the unjust steward. 14 The hypocrisie of the covetous Pharisees reprov'd. 19 The rich glutton and Lazarus.

AND he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man which had a steward, and the same was accused unto him, that he had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee ? Give an account of thy stewardship : for thou maiest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do, for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship ? I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resolv'd what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses.

5 So he called every one of his lords debtors unto him, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord ?

6 And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty.

7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou ? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore.

8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely : for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And

| The word *Bath* in the original, containeth nine gallons three quarters.
| The word here interpreted a measure in the original, containeth about fourteen bushels and a pottle.

S. LUKE.

¶ Or,
riches

9 And I say unto you, Make to your selves friends of the || mammon of unrighteousnesse, that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.

10 He that is faithful in that which is least, is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much.

¶ Or,
riches.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous || mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another mans, who shall give you that which is your own?

¶ Matth.
6. 24.

13 ¶ No seruant can serue two masters, for either he will hate the one, and love other: or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other: ye cannot serue God and mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said unto them, Ye ye are they which iustifie your selves before men, but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed amongst men, is abominat on in the sight of God.

¶ Matth.
23. 12.

16 * The law and the prophets were until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it.

¶ Matth.
5. 18.

17 * And it is easier for heaven and earth to passe, then one tittle of the law to fail.

¶ Matth.
5. 33.

18 * Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adultery.

19 ¶ There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared sumptuously every day.

20 And there was a certain begger named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores;

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich mans table: moreover, the dog came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe that the begger died, and was carried by the angels into Abrahams bosom

C H A P. XVII.

holom: the rich man also died and was buried.

23 And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abzaham afar off, and Lazarus in his bolom;

24 And he cryed, and said, Father Abzaham, have mercie on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abzaham said, Son, remember that thou in thy life time receivest thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a gasse fixed, so that they which would passe from hence to you, cannot, neither can they passe to us, that would come from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I have five brethren, that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment,

29 Abzaham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them.

30 And he said, Nay, Father Abzaham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be perswaded though one rose from the dead.

C H A P. XVII.

1 To avoid occasions of offence. 3 One to forgive another. 6 the power of saith. 11 the ten lepers.

Then said he unto the disciples, * It is impossible but that offences will come, but two unto him through whom they come. * Matth. 18.7.

2 It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, then that he should offend one of these little ones.

3 Take heed to your selves: * if thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him, and if he repent, forgive him. * Matth. 18.21.

4 And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying,

S L U K E.

saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

6 * And the Lord said, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine-tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea, and it should obey you.

7 But which of you having a servant plowing, or feeding cattel, will say unto him by and by when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat?

8 And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy self, and serve me till I have eaten and drunken: afterwards thou shalt eat and drink.

9 Doth he thank that servant, because he hath done the things that were commanded him? I trow not.

10 So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

11 And it came to passe, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed thorow the midds of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certain villiage, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off.

13 And they lifted up their voices, and said, Jesus Master have mercy on us.

14 And when he saw them, he said unto them, * Go, shew your selves unto the priests. And it came to passe that as they went, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God.

16 And fell down on his face at his feet, giving him thanks, and he was a Samaritane.

17 And Jesus answering, said, Were there not ten cleansed, but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger.

19 And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 And when he was demanded of the Pharisees,

* Matth.
17.20.

* Levit.
14.8.

CHAP. XVII.

free, when the kingdom of God should come, He answered them, and said, The kingdom of God cometh not ¹ with observation.

¹ Or, with outward shew.

21 Neither shall they say, Lo here, or is there: for behold, the kingdom of God is ¹ within you.

¹ Or, among you.

22 And he said unto the disciples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of th: Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

23 * And they shall say to you, See here, or see there: go not after them, nor follow them. ^{* Matth. 24.23.}

24 For as the lightning that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven: so shall also the Son of man be in his day.

25 But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.

26 * And as it was in the dayes of Noe, so shall ^{* Gen. 7.} it be also in the dayes of the Son of man.

27 They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark: and the flood came, and destroyed them all.

28 * Likewise also as it was in the dayes of Lot, they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded: ^{* Gen. 19.}

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all.

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.

31 In that day he which shall be upon the house top, and his stuffe in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back.

32 * Remember Lots wife.

^{* Gen. 19.26.}

33 * Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it, and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it. ^{* Matth. 15.25.}

34 * I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed, the one shall be taken, the other shall be left. ^{* Matth. 24.40.}

35 Two women shall be grinding together, the one shall be taken, and the other left.

36 ¶ Two

S. LUKE.

¶ This
26. ver is
wanting
in most
of the
Greek
copies.
* Matth.
24. 28.

36 ¶ Two men shall be in the field: the one shall be taken, and the other left.

37 And they answered, and said unto him, * Where Lord? and he said unto them, Wherever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 The importunate widow. 9 The Pharisee and the Publicane. 13 Children brought to Christ. 28 All to be lost for Christs sake.

1 Theff.
5. 47.

AND he spake a parable unto them to this end, that men ought * alwayes to pray, and not to faint,

2 Saying, there was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that city, & she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

4 And he would not for a while. But afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me.

6 And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith.

7 And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?

8 I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh, shall he finde faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves, that they were righteous, and despised other.

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a publicane.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publicane.

12 I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

¶ Mr. as
being
righte-
ous.

CHAP. XVIII.

13 And the publicane standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven: but smote upon his breast, saying, God be mercifull to me a sinner.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather then the other: * for every one that exalteth himself, shall be abased: and he that humblyeth himself, shall be exalted. * Math. 23. 12.

15 And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God.

17 Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein.

18 And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternall life?

19 * And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, that is God. * Math. 19. 16.

20 Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father & thy mother.

21 And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up.

22 Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: Sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, & thou shalt have treasure in heaven, and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowfull, for he was very rich.

24 And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowfull, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God?

25 For it is easier for a camel to go thorow a needles eye, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard it, said, Who then can be saved?

27 And he said, the things which are impossible

ble

S. LUKE.

ble with men, are possible with God.

* Matth. 28 * Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and
19. 27. followed thee.

29 And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children for the kingdom of Gods sake,

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

Match. 31 * Then he took unto him the twelve, and
22. 17. said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished.

32 For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spit on:

33 And they shall scourge him, and put him to death, and the third day he shall rise again.

34 And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

* Matth. 35 * And it came to passe, that as he was com-
23. 29. ing unto Jericho, a certain blinde man sat by the way-side begging,

36 And hearing the multitude passe by, he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him that Jesus of Nazareth passed by.

38 And he cried, saying, Jesus thou Son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before, rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, Then Son of David, have mercy on me.

40 And Jesus stood, and commanded him to be brought unto him: and when he was come near, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall do unto thee: And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight.

42 And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight, thy faith hath saved thee.

43 And immediately he received his sight, and followed

CHAP. XIX.

lowed him, glorifying God: and all the people,
when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

CHAP. XIX.

1 Zachous the publicane. 11 The ten pieces of
money. 28 Christ ride in into Jerusalem, 41
weepeth over it: 45 and purgeth the temple.

AND Jesus entered, and passed thorow Jericho.
2 And behold, there was a man, named Za-
cheus, which was the chief among the publicanes,
and he was rich,

3 And he sought to see Jesus who he was, and
could not for the presse, because he was little of
 stature.

4 And he ran before, and climbed up into a sy-
comore tree to see him, for he was to passe that way.

5 And when Jesus came to the place, he looked
up, and saw him, and said unto him, Zacheus, make
haste, and come down, for to day I must abide at
thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came down, and re-
ceived him joyfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured,
saying, That he is gone to be guest with a man
that is a sinner.

8 And Zacheus stood, and said unto the Lord,
Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the
poor, and if I have taken any thing from any man
by false accusation, I restore him four fold.

9 And Jesus said unto him, This day is salva-
tion come to this house, forasmuch as he also is the
son of Abraham.

10 * For the son of man is come to seek, and to
save that which was lost.

* Math.
19. 11.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and
spoke a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem,
and because they thought that the kingdom of God
should immediately appear.

12 * He said therefore, a certain noble man * Math.
went into a far countrey, to receive for himself a
kingdom, and to return.

25. 14-9

13 And he called his ten servants, and delibered
them

S. LUKE.

*1 Mina
here
transla-
ted, a
pound is
twelve
ounces
and an
half,
which
accord-
ing to
five shil-
lings the
ounce,
is three
pounds
two shil-
lings six
pence,*

them ten || pounds, and said unto them, Accipite illud
I come,

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a mes-
sage after him, saying, We will not have this man
to reign over us.

15 And it came to passe, that when he was re-
turned, having received the kingdom, then he com-
manded his servants to be called unto him, to whom
he had given the money, that he might know how
much every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound
hath gained ten pounds.

17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good ser-
vant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little,
have thou authority over ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound
hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, be thou also over
five cities.

20 And another came, saying Lord, behold, here is
thy pound which I have kept laid up in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere
man: thou takest up that thou laidst not down, and
reapest that thou didst not sow.

22 And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth
wilt I judge thee, thou wicked servant: thou know-
est that I was an austere man, taking up that I
laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow:

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money
into the bank, that at my coming I might have re-
quired mine own with usury?

24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take
from him the pound, and give it to him that hath
ten pounds.

25 And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten
pounds.

26 For I say unto you, * That unto every one
which hath, shall be given, and from him that hath
not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.

27 But those mine enemies which would not
that I should reign over them, bring hither, and
slay them before me.

* Matth.
13. 12,

28 And

CHAP. XIX.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before ascending up to Jerusalem.

29 * And it came to passe, when he was come nigh * Matth.
21.1. to Bethphage, and Bethanie, at the mount called the mount of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying, Go ye into the village over against you, in the which at your entering, ye shall finde a colt tied, whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose him? thus shall ye say to him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Jesus, and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.

36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoyce and praise God with a loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had seen,

38 Saying, Blessed be the King that cometh in the Name of the Lord, peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude, said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 And he answered, and said unto them, I tell you that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

41 ¶ And when he was come neer, he beheld the city, and wept over it.

42 Saying, if thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto the peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come upon thee, that thine enemies

S. LUKE.

enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee: and they shall not leave thee one stone upon another, because thou knowest not the time of thy visitation.

* Matth.
21. 32.

45 * And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought,

46 Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.

47 And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief priests, and the scribes, and the chief of the people sought to destroy him.

¶ Or,
hanged
on him.

48 And could not find what they might do: for all the people were very attentive to hear him.

CHAP. XX.

1 Christ avoucheth his authority by a question of Johns Baptism. 9 The parable of the vineyard 19 Tribute to Cesar.

* Matth.
21. 23.

AND * it came to passe, that on one of the dayes, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and scribes came upon him with the elders,

2 And spake unto him, saying, Tell us by what authority dost thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

3 And he answered, and said unto them, I will also ask you one thing, and answer me.

4 The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of men?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say, Why then didst thou not believe him?

6 But and if we say, Of men, all the people will stone us: for they be persuaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they answered, that they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

CHAP. XX.

9 Then began he to speak to the people this parable, * A certain man planted a vineyard, and ⁴ *Matth.* let it forth to husbandmen, and went into a far ^{21. 35.} countrey for a long time.

10 And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard, but the husbandmen beat him, and sent him away empty.

11 And again he sent another servant, and they beat him also, and entreated him shamefully, and sent him away empty.

12 And again he sent the third, and they wounded him also, and cast him out.

13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my beloved son: it may be they will reverence him, when they see him.

14 But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir, come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours.

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed him, What therefore shall the Lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He shall come, and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard it, they said, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, * The stone which the builders ⁴ *Psalm* rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? ^{118. 22.}

18 Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 And the chief priests, and the scribes, the same hour sought to lay hands on him, and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

21 And they asked him, saying, * Master, say ⁴ *Matth.* ^{23. 16.}

S. LUKE.

know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person of any, but teachest the way of God truly.

10th of a
month.

22 Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or no?

23 But he perceives their craftynesse, and saith unto them, Why tempt ye me?

1st Sec.
Matth.
23. 23.

24 Shew me a penny: whose image and superscription hath it? they answered, and said, Cesars.

25 And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which be Cesars, and unto God the things which be Gods.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people, and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace.

* Matth.
23. 23.

27 ¶ Then came to him, certain of the Sadducees, (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any mans brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

29 There were therefore seven brethren, and the first took a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second took her to wife, and he died childlesse.

31 And the third took her, and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all the woman died also.

33 Therefore in the resurrection whose wife is she? for seven had her to wife.

34 And Jesus answering, said unto them, The children of this world marry, & are given in marriage:

35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

* Exod.
3. 6.

37 Now that the dead are raised, * even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord. God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

C H A P. XXI.

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living; for all live unto him.

39 ¶ Then certain of the scribes answering, said, Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, they durst not ask him any question at all.

41 And he said unto them, * How say they that * Mat.
Christ is Davids Son? 22-24

42 And David himself saith in the book of psalms, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand:

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

44 Davids therefore calleth him Lord, how is he then his son?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people he said unto his disciples,

46 * Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk * Mat.
in long robes, and love greetings in the markets, 23-24
and the highest seats in the synagogues, and the chief rooms at feasts:

47 Which devour widows houses, and for a shew make long prayers: the same shall receive greater damnation.

C H A P. XXI.

1 The poor widow is commended. 5 The destruction of the temple and city foretold. 25 The signs thereof.

AND he looked up, * and saw the rich men casting * Mark
their gifts into the treasury. 12-41

2 And he saw also a certain poor widow, casting in thither two || mites.

3 And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all: ¶ See Mark 12-42

4 For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God, but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

5 ¶ * And as some spake of the temple, how it * Mat.
was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts, he said, 21-22

6 As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

7 And they asked him, saying, Master, but when shall

S. LUKE.

shall these things be? and what sign will there be when these things shall come to passe?

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not deceived: for many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth nigh: go ye not therefore after them.

9 But when ye shall hear of wars, and commotions, be not terrified: for these things must first come to passe, but the end is not by and by.

* Mat.
24.7.

10 * Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome:

11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences, and fearful sights, and great signs shall there be from heaven.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought before kings and rulers for my Names sake.

13 And it shall turn to you for a testimony.

* Mat.
10.19.

14 * Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer.

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay, nor resist,

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents and brethren, and kinsfolke, and friends, and some of you shall they cause to be put to death:

17 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake.

* Mat.
10.30.

18 * But there shall not a hair of your head perish.

19 In your patience possess ye your souls.

* Mat.
24.13.

20 * And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

21 Then let them which are in Judea flee to the mountains, and let them which are in the midst of it, depart out, and let not them that are in the country, enter thereinto.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, that all things which are written, may be fulfilled.

23 But woe unto them that are with childe, and to them that give suck in those dayes: for there shall

b
p
a
f
e
in
the
w
loc
est
ing
the
den
fig
of
ban
3
to p
at b
32
not
33
hope
34
time
and
day
35
well
36
ye m
thing
the
37
templ

C H A P. XXI.

be great distresse in the land, and wrath upon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations, and Ierusalem shall be troden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 ¶ And there shall be signes in the sun, and ^{Mat.} in the moon, and in the stars, and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waves roaring,

26 And hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud, with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to passe, then look up, and lift up your heads, for your redemption draweth nigh.

29 And he spake to them a parable, Behold, the fig-tree, and all the trees,

30 When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves, that summer is now nigh at hand.

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to passe, know ye, that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not passe away, till all be fulfilled.

33 Heaven and earth shall passe away, but my word shall not passe away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkennesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

36 Watch ye therefore, and pray alwayes, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to passe, and to stand before the Son of man.

37 And in the day time he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the

S. LUKE.

mount that is called the mount of olives.

38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple to hear him.

C H A P. XXII.

1 The Jews conspire against Christ. 3 Satan enters into Judas. 7 The pascover prepared. 10 The supper instituted. 47 Judas betrayed him.

* Mat.
26.2.

NOW the feast of unleavened bread begins which is called the pascover.

* Mat.
26.4.

2 And the chief priests and scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.

3 ¶ Then entered Satan into Judas, surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

4 And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests, and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

¶ Or,
without
consult.
* Mat.
26.27.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

7 ¶ Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the pascover must be killed.

8 And he sent Peter and John saying, Go and prepare us the pascover, that we may eat.

9 And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water, follow him into the house where he entereth in.

11 And ye shall say unto the good man of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the pascover with my disciples?

12 And he shall shew you a large upper room furnished, there make ready.

13 And they went and found as he had said unto them, and they made ready the pascover.

* Mat.
26.20.

14 ¶ And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.

CHAP. XXII.

15 And he said unto them, **I** which desire **I** have desired to eat this pasche with you before **I** suffer. I have heartily desired.

16 For **I** say unto you, **I** will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

17 And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide it among your selves.

18 For **I** say unto you, **I** will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

19 ¶ And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying, This is my body which is given for you, this do in remembrance of me. * Mark. 16. 26.

20 Likewise also the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 ¶ But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me on the table. * Mark. 16. 21.

22 And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was determined, but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed.

23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

25 * And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and they that exercise authority upon them, are called benefactors. * Mark. 10. 25.

26 But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger, and he that is chief as he that doth serve.

27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? Is not he that sitteth at meat? But **I** am among you as he that serveth.

28 Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

29 And **I** appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me:

30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, * and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. * Mark. 19. 28.

S LUKE.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold
 * 1 Pet. 9. 8. * Satan hath desired to have you, that he may
 you as wheat :

32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith
 fail not ; and when thou art converted, strengthen
 thy brethren.

33 And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to
 go with thee, both into prison, and to death.

* Matth. 26. 34. 34 * And he said, I tell thee, Peter, the cock
 shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thine
 deny that thou knowest me.

* Matth. 26. 9. 35 * And he said unto them, When I sent you
 without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any
 thing ? And they said, Nothing.

36 Then said he unto them, But now he that
 hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip :
 and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment
 and buy one.

* Isaiah 53. 12. 37 For I say unto you, that this that is written,
 must yet be accomplished in me, * And he was
 reckoned amongst the transgressors : for the things
 concerning me have an end.

38 And they said, Lord, behold, here are the
 swords, And he said unto them, It is enough.

* Matth. 26. 36. 39 ¶ * And he came out, and went as he
 wont to the mount of Olives, and his disciples
 also followed him.

* Matth. 26. 41. 40 * And when he was at the place, he said
 unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation.

41 And he was withdrawn from them about
 stones cast, and kneeled down and prayed,

42 Saying, Father if thou be willing, remove
 this cup from me : nevertheless, not my will, but
 thine be done.

43 And there appeared an angel unto him from
 heaven strengthening him.

44 And being in an agony, he prayed more
 earnestly ; and his sweat was as it were great drops
 of blood falling down to the ground.

45 And when he rose up from prayer, he was come
 to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow.

46 And said unto them, Why sleep ye ?

C H A P. XXII.

and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

47 **A**nd while he yet spake, * behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jesus to kiss him. * Mat. 26-47.

48 But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou me with a kiss?

49 **W**hen they which were about him, saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

50 **A**nd one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his right ear.

51 And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear and healed him.

52 **T**hen Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Be ye come out against a thief, with swords and staves?

53 **W**hen I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

54 **A**nd * Then took they him, and led him, and brought him into the high priests house, and Peter followed afar off. * Mat. 26-57.

55 **A**nd when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall, and were set down together Peter sat down among them. * Mat. 26-67.

56 But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said, This man was also with him.

57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not.

59 And about the space of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this fellows also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, the cock crew.

61 **A**nd the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter.

S. LUKE.

and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 ¶ And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they stroke him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie. who is it that smote thee?

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

* Matth. 27. 1. 66 ¶ And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people, and the chief priests, and the scribes came together, & led him into their counsel, saying,

67 Art thou the Christ? tell us, And he said unto them, If I tell you, you will not beleve.

68 And if I also ask, you will not answer me, nor let me go.

69 Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

* Mark 14. 62. 70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, * Ye say that I am.

71 And they said, What need we any further witnesse? for we our selves have heard of his own mouth.

C H A P. XXIII.

1 Jesus accused before Pilate, 7 sent to Herod, 11 mocked and sent back again to Pilate, 14 delivered to be crucified, 46 his death, 50 his burial.

AND the whole multitude of them arose, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that himself is Christ a king.

* Matth. 27. 11. 3 * And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews? And he answered him, and said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests, and to the people, I find no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, We find nothing, the people, teaching them to saye all Ierusalem

CHAP. XXIII.

beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herods jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time.

8 And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceedingly glad, for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chief priests and scribes stood, and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of war set him at naught, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together, for before they were at enmity between themselves.

13 * And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers, and the people, * Matth. 27. 23.

14 Said unto them, He have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people, and behold, I having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof ye accuse him:

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.

17 For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.

18 And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas,

19 Who for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast in prison.

20 Pilate therefore willing to release Jesus, spake again to them:

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.

22 And he said unto them the third time, Why what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death

S. LUKE.

death in him, I will therefore chastise him, and let him go.

23 And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified: and the voices of them, and of the chief priests, prevailed.

1 Cor.
assented.

24 And Pilate gave sentence that it should be as they requested.

25 And he released unto them, him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired, but he delivered Jesus to their will.

* March.
27. 32.

26 * And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the countrey, and on him they laid the crosse, that he might bear it after Jesus.

27 And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which also bewailed and lamented him.

28 But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for your selves, and for your children.

29 For behold, the dayes are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed, are the barren, & the wombes that never bare, & the paps which never gave suck.

* Isaiah
2. 19.
Hos. 10. 2.
Revel.
6. 16.
1 Pet.

30 * Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us, and to the hills cover us.

31 * For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry?

4. 17.
* March.
27. 38.
1 Cor.
the place
of a skull

32 * And there were also two other malefactors led with him to be put to death.

33 And when they were come to the place which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand, and the other on the left.

34 And when Jesus said, Father, forgive them: for they know not what they do: and they parted his tament and cast lots.

35 And the people soon beholding, and the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He save others, let him save himself, if he be Christ the chosen of God.

36 And theouldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar.

CHAP. XXIII.

37 And saying, If thou be the king of the Jews, save thy self.

38 And a superscription also was written over him, in letters of Greek, and Latine, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 ¶ And one of the malefactors, which were hanged, roiled on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thy self and us.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth, until the ninth hour. ¶ Chap. 1

45 And the sun was darkned, and the vail of the temple was rent in the midst.

46 ¶ And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, * Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost. * Mat. 27. 46.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote on their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

50 ¶ And behold, there was a man named Joseph, a counsellor, & he was a good man, and a just. * Mat. 27. 57.

51 (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them) he was of Arimathea, a city of the Jews (who also himself waited for the kingdom of God.)

52 This man went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And

S. LUKE.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath began on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices, and ointments, and rested the sabbath day, according to the commandment.

CHAP. XXIIII.

1 Christs resurrection declared to the women.

9 They report it to others, 13 and 36 Christ himself appeareth.

* Matth.
28. 1.

NOW upon the first day of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain others with them.

2 And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afraid, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye ^{the} living among the dead?

3 Or,
him that
liveth.
* Matth.
27. 23.

6 He is not here, but is risen: * Remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee,

7 Saying, the Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again.

8 And they remembered his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, & Joanna, & Mary the mother of James, & other women that were with them, which told these things unto the apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

CHAP. XXIIII.

12 * Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves, and departed, wondering in him, what that which was come to passe. * J. An. 20.5.

13 * And behold, two of them went that same day to a village, called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem about threescore furlongs. * Mark 15.12.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them.

16 But their eyes were held, that they should not know him.

17 And he said unto them, What manner of communications are these that ye have one to another as ye walk, and are sad?

18 And the one of them, whose name was Cleophas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to passe there in these daies?

19 And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a Prophet, mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people.

20 And how the chief priests, and our rulers, delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him.

21 But we trusted that it had been he, which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yes, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said, that he was alive.

24 And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women had said, but him they saw not.

25. Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to beleve all that the prophets have spoken:

26 Where:

S. LUKE.

26 Dought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures, the things concerning himself.

28 And they came nigh unto the village, whither they went, and he made as though he would have gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us, for it is towards evening, and the day is far spent: and he went in to tarry with them.

30 And it came to passe as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed it, and brake, and gave to them.

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew him, and he vanished out of their sight.

¶ Now ceased to be seen of them.

32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

33 And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, the Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

** Mark 16. 14.*

36 ¶ And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

37 But they were terrified, and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

38 And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled, and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my self: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

CHAP. I.

42 And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish,
and of an hony-comb.

43 And he took it, and did eat before them.

44 And he said unto them, These are the words
which I spake unto you while I was yet with you,
That all things must be fulfilled which were writ-
ten in the law of Moyses, and in the prophets, and
in the psalms concerning me.

45 Then opened he their understanding, that
they might understand the scriptures :

46 And said unto them, Thus it is written, and
thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the
dead the third day :

47 And that repentance and remission of sins
should be preached in his Name among all nations,
beginning at Jerusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

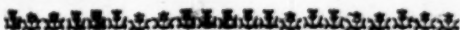
49 ¶ And he said, I send the promise of my Father upon you : but tarry ye in the city of Jerusa-
lem, until ye be endued with power from on high. * John 15. 26.
Acts 1. 4.

50 ¶ And he led them out as far as to Bethany,
and he lift up his hands, and blessed them.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, while he blessed them, he
was parted from them, and carried up into heaven. * Mark 16. 19.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to
Jerusalem, with great joy : Acts 1. 9.

53 And were continually in the temple, praising
and blessing God. Amen.



¶ THE GOSPEL ACCORDING to saint JOHN.

CHAP. I.

1 Christ's divinity, humanity, and office. 15 Johns
testimony of him. 39 The calling of Andrew,
Peter and others.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the
Word was with God, and the Word
was God.

2 * The same was in the beginning * Gen. 1. 1.

3 * All

5. JOHN.

* Coloss. 3. 16. 3 * All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darknesse, and the darknesse comprehended it not.

* Matth. 3. 1. 6 ¶ There was a man sent from God, whose name was John,

7 The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the light, that all men through him might believe.

8 He was not that light, but was sent to bear witness of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

* Hebr. 11. 3. 10 He was in the world, and * the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his Name :

for, the
rights, or
privi-
ledge.

13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

* Matth. 1. 16. 14 * And the word was made flesh, and dwelt among us. (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father) full of grace, and truth.

15 ¶ John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me, for he was before me.

* Coloss. 1. 19. 16 And of his * fulnesse have all we received, and grace for grace.

17 For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

* 1 John 4. 12. 1 Tim. 6. 16. 18 * No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou ?

20 And he confessed, and denied not : but confessed, I am not the Christ.

CHAP. I.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that ^{John, a} Prophet? And he answered, No. ^{prophet.}

22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou, that we may give an answer to them that sent us? What sayest thou of thy self?

23 * He said, I am the voice of one crying in the * ^{Matth.} wilderness, make straight the way of the Lord, as ^{1.3.} said the prophet Elias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that Prophet?

26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you whom ye know not.

27 * He it is, who coming after me, is preferred * ^{Matth.} before me, whose shoes latchet I am not worthy to ^{3.11.} unloose. ^{ad. 19.4.}

28 These things were done in Bethabara, beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world. ^{10.} ^{heareth.}

30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man, which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

32 * And John bare record, saying, I saw the * ^{Matth.} Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it ^{3.16.} abode upon him.

33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw, and bare record, that this is the Son of God.

35 ¶ Again the next day after, John stood, and one of his disciples.

36 And

3 JOHN:

36 And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus.

38 Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi (which is to say, being interpreted, Master) where dwellest thou?

¶ Or,
abide.

39 He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.

¶ That
was two
hours
before
night.

40 One of the two which heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messiah, which is, being interpreted, the Christ.

¶ Or,
the an-
ointed.

42 And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jonas, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a Stone.

¶ Or,
Peter.

43 The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom * Moses in the law, and the * prophets did write, Jesus of Nazareth the Son of Joseph.

* Gen. 49
10.
Levit. 24.
18.
* Isa. 43.

46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.

47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile.

48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee.

49 Nathanael answered, and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God, thou art the King of Israel.

to Jesus

CHAP. II.

50. Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, beleevest thou: thou shalt see greater things than these.

51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily I say unto you, hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending, and descending upon the Son of man.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine: 12 departeth to Capernaum and Jerusalem, 14 and purgeth the temple.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there.

2 And both Jesus was called, and his disciples to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.

5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it.

6 And there were set there six water pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water pots with water. And they fill them up to the brim.

8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants which drew the water knew) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom,

10 And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine, and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory, and his disciples beleeved on him.

S. JOHN.

12 ¶ After this he went down to Capernaum, he and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples, and they continued there not many dayes,

13 ¶ And the Jews passeover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem,

14 And found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money sitting.

15 And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen, and poured out the changers money, and overthrew the tables:

16 And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence, make not my Fathers house a house of merchandise.

17 And his disciples remembered that it was written, * The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.

18 ¶ Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?

19 Jesus answered and said unto them, * Destroy this temple, and in three dayes I will raise it up.

20 ¶ Then said the Jews, Forty and six yeeres was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three dayes?

21 But he spake of the temple of his body.

22 ¶ When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them: and they beleebed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passeover, in the feast day, many beleebed in his Name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

24 But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men,

25 And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.

C H A P. III.

1 Christ teacheth Nicodemus the necessitie of regeneration. 14 Of faith in Christ. 16 Gods great love to the world. 21 Johns baptism, witness, and doctrine concerning Christ.

¶

CHAP. III.

There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews :

2 The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God, for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Jesus answered, and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.

4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers womb, and be born?

Or, from above.

5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily I say unto thee, except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

6 That which is born of the flesh, is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit, is Spirit.

7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

Or, from above.

8 The winde bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered, and said unto him, How can these things be?

10 Jesus answered: and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily, verily I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen, and ye receive not our witness.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not: how shall ye believe if I tell you of heavenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.

14 *C** And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness: even so must the Son of man be lifted up:

** Num. 21. 9.*

15 That whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have eternal life.

16 *C** For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son: that whosoever believeth

** 1 John 4. 9.*

in

S. JOHN.

in him, should not perish, but have everlasting life.
 17 * For God sent not his Son into the world
 to condemn the world: but that the world through
 him might be saved.

* Chap.
 12. 47.

18 ¶ He that believeth on him, is not condemned:
 but he that believeth not, is condemned already, be-
 cause he hath not believed in the Name of the only
 begotten Son of God.

* Chap.
 1. 4.

19 And this is the condemnation, * that light is
 come into the world; and men loved darkness rather
 than light; because their deeds were evil.

20 For every one that hath evil, hateth the light,
 neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be
 reproved.

¶ Or,
 discover-
 ed.

21 But he that doth truth, cometh to the light,
 that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are
 wrought in God.

22 ¶ After these things came Jesus and his dis-
 ciples into the land of Judea, and there he tarried
 with them, * and baptized.

* Chap.
 4. 2.

23 ¶ And John also was baptizing in Aenon,
 next to Salim: because there was much water
 there: and they came and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question between some
 of Jesus disciples and the Jews, about purifying.

26 Another came unto John, and said unto him
 Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, * a
 whom thou bearest witness, behold, the same baptiz-
 eth, and all men come to him.

* Chap.
 1. 7, 34.

27 John answered, and said, * A man can re-
 ceive nothing, except it be given him from heaven.

* Hebr.

5. 4.

¶ Or,

take unto

himself.

* Chap.

1. 20.

28 He that seeth hear me witness, that I said: I
 am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom:
 but the friend of the bridegroom which standeth and
 heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bride-
 grooms voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

31 He that cometh from above is above all: he
 that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the
 earth: he that cometh from heaven, is above all:

C H A P. IV.

32 And what he hath seen and heard, that he telleth, and no man receiveth his testimony.

33 He that hath received his testimony, * hath
 let to his seal that God is true. * Rom.
3.4.

34 For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure unto him.

35 * The Father loveth the Son, and hath given
 all things into his hand. * Mat.
11.27.
* Hab.2.
4.

36 * He that believeth on the Son, hath everlasting life: & he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life: but the wrath of God abideth on him. 1 John
3.10.

C H A P. IV.

1 Christ talketh with a woman of Samaria, and revealeth himself unto her. 17 His disciples marvel. 31 Christs zeal to Gods glory.

When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John,

2 (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples)

3 He left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.

4 And he must needs go through Samaria.

5 Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, neer to the parcel of ground
 * that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. * Gen.
31.19. &
48.22.
John.4.
32.

6 Now Jacobs well was there. Jesus there, sore being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour.

7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink.

8 For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me which am a woman of Samaria? For the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritanes.

10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knowest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink, thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water.

S. JOHN.

11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water?

12 Art thou greater then our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle?

13 Jesus answered, and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water, shall thirst again:

14 But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.

15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered, and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband:

18 For thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast, is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truely.

19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain, and ye say, That * in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, beleve me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem worship the Father.

22 Ye worship we know not what; we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews.

23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth, for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 * God is a spirit, and they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in truth.

25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things.

26 And

* Dent.
32.5.

* 1 Cor.
13.7.

C H A P. I I I I.

26 Iesus saith unto her, That speak unto thee, am he.

27 And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water-pot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men,

29 Come, see a man, which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

31 In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat.

32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of.

33 Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat?

34 Iesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work.

35 Say not ye, There are yet four moneths, and then cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields: * for they are white already to harvest. Mark!
9-37.

36 And he that reapeth, receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth may rejoyce together.

37 And herein is that saying true: One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.

39 And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did.

40 So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many more believed because of his own word:

42 And said unto the woman, Now we believe, because of thy saying: for we have heard him say

S. JOHN.

our selves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

* Matth.
23 57.

43 ¶ Now after two dayes he departed thence, and went into Galilee:

44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honoz in his own country.

45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

* Chap.
23.
8 Or,
courtesier,
or raler.

46 So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was certain noble man, whose son was sick at Capernaum.

47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him, that he would come down, and heal his son: in he was at the point of death.

48 Then said Jesus unto him, except ye see signes and wonders, ye will not beleefe.

49 The noble man saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my childe die.

50 Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way, thy son liveth. And the man beleaved the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told him, saying, Thy son liveth.

52 Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend: and they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the same hour, in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself beleaved, and his whole house.

54 This is again the second miracle that Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

C H A P. V.

¶ Jesus on the sabbath day cureth him that was diseased eight and thirty yeers. 10 The Jews cavil, and persecute him for it. 17 He answereth for himself.

* Levit.
24. 2.
Deut. 16.

After this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

C H A P. V.

2 Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market, a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.

*10p. 1
etc.*

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blinde, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water steppen in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight yeers.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another stepeth down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

10 The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath day, * it is not lawful

** Jer.
17.21.*

for thee to carry thy bed.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed and walk.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed and walk?

13 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place.

*10p. 1
from the
multi-
tude that
was.*

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed and told the Jews, that it was Jesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day.

3. JOHN.

17 ¶ But Iesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, not onely because he had broken the Sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.

19 Then answered Iesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doth, these also doth the Son likewise.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doth: and he will shew him greater works then these, that ye may marvel.

21 For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickneth them: even so the Son quickneth whom he will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man: but hath committed all judgement unto the Son:

23 That all men should honor the Son, even as they honor the Father. He that honoreth not the Son, honoreth not the Father which hath sent him.

24 Verily verily I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death unto life.

25 Verily, verily I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the son of God: and they that hear, shall live.

26 For as the Father hath life in himself: so hath he given to the Son, to have life in himself:

27 And hath given him authority to execute judgement also, because he is the Son of man.

28 Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,

29 And shall come forth, * they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life, and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

C H A P. V.

30 I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is just, because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.

31 * If I bear witness of my self, my witness ^{* chap. 8. 14.} is not true.

32 * There is another that beareth witness of me, and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me, is true. ^{* Mar. 3. 17.}

33 He sent unto John, * and he bare witness unto the truth. ^{* chap. 1. 7.}

34 But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved.

35 He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

36 * But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

37 And the Father himself which hath sent me, * hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, * nor seen his shape. ^{* Mat. 3. 17. & 17. 3.}

38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.

39 * Search the scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life, and they are they which testify of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

41 I receive not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

43 I am come in my Fathers name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

44 * How can ye believe, which receive honour ^{* Deut. 4. 13.} of another, and seek not the honour that cometh ^{* chap. 12. 13.} from God only?

45 Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust,

46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have

5. JOHN.

* Gen. 1. have beleue me: * for he wrote of me.

17.

Deut. 18.

25.

47 But if ye beleue not his writings, how shall ye beleue my words?

CHAP. VI.

1 Christ feedeth five thousand with five loaves and two fishes. 12 He reproveth the fleshly hearers of his word. 32 Declareth himself to be the bread of life.

After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias.

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.

3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.

* Levit.

23. 5.

Deut.

16. 1.

* Matth.

14. 15.

4 * And the paschever a feast of the Jews was nigh.

5 * When Jesus then lift up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat?

6 (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do)

7 Philip answered him, Two hundred penny worth of bread is not sufficient for them, that each one of them may take a little.

8 One of his Disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith unto him,

9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

11 And Jesus took the loaves; and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were sit down, and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.

13 And they gathered them together, and

C H A P. VI.

filled the baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.

15 When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

16 * And when even was now come, his disciples went down unto the sea, * Matth.
14.23.

17 And entered into a ship, and went over the sea towards Capernaum: and it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

18 And the sea arose, by reason of a great wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty, or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.

20 But he saith unto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship, and immediately the ship was at the land, whither they went.

22 The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea, saw that there was none other boat there, save that one wherewith his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples were gone away alone:

23 (Notwithstanding there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks.)

24 When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither?

26 Jesus answered them, and said, Verily, verily,

3. JOHN.

verily I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

¶ 9.
work
not.

27 ¶ Labor not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: * for him hath God the Father sealed.

* Matth.
3. 17.

28 Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God?

* 1 John
3. 23.

29 Jesus answered and said unto them, * This is the work of God, that ye beleve on him whom he hath sent.

30 They said therefore unto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see, and beleve thee? What doest thou work?

* Exod.
16. 15.
Numb.
11. 7.
* Psal.
78. 25.

31 * Our fathers did eat manna in the desert, as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Moles gave you not that bread from heaven, but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven:

33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34 Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me, shall never hunger; and he that beleeveth on me, shall never thirst.

36 But I said unto you, that ye also have seen me, and beleve not.

37 All that the Father giveth me, shall come to me; and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and beleeveth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

CHAP. VI.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42 And they said, * Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven? * Matth. 13. 55.

43 Jesus therefore answered, and said unto them, Murmure not among your selves.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day.

45 * It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me: * Isa. 54. 13. Jer. 31. 34.

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father. * Matth. 11. 27.

47 Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, hath everlasting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof and not die.

51 I am the living bread, which came down from heaven. If any man eat of this bread, he shall live forever: and the bread that I will give, is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore strove amongst themselves, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat?

53 When Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

54 Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day.

55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed,

56 He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

S. J. O H N.

57 As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.

58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your Fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread, shall live forever.

59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard this, said, This is an hard saying, who can hear it?

61 When Jesus knew in himself, that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you?

* Chap.
3. 15.

62 * What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?

63 It is the spirit that quickneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning, who they were that believed not, and who should betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

66 From that time many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? Thou hast the words of eternal life.

* Matth.
26. 26.

69 * And we believe, and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God.

70 Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?

71 He spake of Judas Iscariot the son of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

Jesus reproveth his kinsmen, 10 goeth up to the feast of tabernacles, 14 teacheth in the temple. 40 Divers opinions of Christ. 45 The Pharisees angry at their officers, and at Nicodemus.

AFTER these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Iury, because the Jews sought to kill him.

2 * Now the Jews feast of tabernacles was at hand. * Leviticus 23 34.

3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Iudaea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest.

4 For there is no man there both any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly: If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world.

5 For neither do his brethren beleve in him.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil.

8 Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, * for my time is not yet full come. * chap. 9. 30.

9 When he had said these words unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret.

11 Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay but he deceiveth the people.

13 Notwithstanding, no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

14 ¶ Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? * 1 Cor. 13. 12.

16 Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.

S. J O H N.

17 If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine whether it be of God, or whether I speak of my self.

18 He that speaketh of himself, seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

19 * Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? * Why go ye about to kill me?

20 The people answered, and said, Thou hast a devil: who goest about to kill thee?

21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

22 * Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision (not because it is of Moses,* but of the fathers) and ye on the sabbath-day circumsise a man.

23 If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken: are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day?

24 * Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

25 Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he, whom they seek to kill?

26 But so, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him: Do the rulers know indeed, that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is; but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried Jesus in the temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am, and I am not come of my self, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, and he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

31 And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these, which this man hath done?

32 The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him: and the Pharisees

* Exod.
24.3.
* Chap.
1.12.

* Levit.
27.3.
* Gen.
17.10.
Or. with
out breas-
king the
law of
Moses,
* Deut.
1.16.

CHAP. VII.

Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, & then I go unto him that sent me.

34 * Ye shall seek me, and shall not finde me: * Chap. 13. 33.
and where I am, thither ye cannot come.

35 Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go that we shall not finde him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? [Or, Greeks;

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not finde me? and where I am, thither ye cannot come?

37 * In the last day, that great day of the feast, * Levit. 23. 36.
Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink.

38 * He that believeth on me, as the scripture * Deut. 18. 15.
hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.

39 (* But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that beleeve on him, should receive: for the holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified) * Joel 2. 28. 16. 44. 3.

40 Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

42 * Hath not the scripture said, that Christ * Math. 2. 2.
cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehchem, where David was?

43 So there was a division among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees, and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?

S. JOHN.

48 Have any of the rulers, or of the Pharisees believed on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the law, are cursed.

* Chap.

3. 2.

Dent.

27. 10. &

1. 18.

50 Nicodemus saith unto them, (* He that came to Jesus by night, being one of them)

51 * Doth our law judge any man before it hear him, and know what he doth?

52 They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? search and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAP. VIII

1 Christ delivereth the woman taken in adultery.

13 Preacheth himself the light of the world, and justifieth his doctrine.

Jesus went unto the mount of Olives.

2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him, and he sat down and taught them.

3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery, and when they had set her in the midst,

4 They say unto him, Master this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

* Levit.

20. 10.

5 * Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote one the ground, as though he heard them not.

* Dent.

17. 7.

7 So when they continued asking him, he lift up himself, and said unto them, * He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.

9 And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.

10 When Jesus had lift up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where

CHAP. VIII.

Where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?

11 He saith, no man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: Go, and sin no more.

12 Then spake Jesus again unto them saying, * I am the light of the world: he that followeth me, shall not walk in darknesse, but shall have the light of life. * Chap. 1. 9. and 9. 5.

13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thy self, thy record is not true.

14 Jesus answered, and said unto them, * Though I bear record of my self yet my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go: but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go. * Chap. 8. 14.

15 He judge after the flesh, I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my judgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

17 * It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true.

18 I am one that bear witness of my self, and the Father that sent me, beareth witness of me. * Deut. 17. 6. Math. 18. 15.

19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, He neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.

20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple, and no man laid hands on him, for his hour was not yet come.

21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins. Whether I go ye cannot come.

22 Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself: because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come.

23 And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath, I am from above: Ye are of this world, I am not of this world.

24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: For if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins.

25 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And

3. JOHN:

And Iesus saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning.

25 I have many things to say, and to judge of you: But he that sent me, is true, and I speak the words those things which I have heard of him.

27 They understood not that he spake to them of the Father.

28 Then said Iesus unto them, When ye have lift up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of my self, but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.

29 And he that sent me, is with me: the Father hath not left me alone: for I do always those things that please him.

30 As he spake those words, many believed on him.

31 Then said Iesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed.

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

33 They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

34 Iesus answered them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.

35 And the servant abideth not in the house forever: but the son abideth ever.

36 If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

37 I know that ye are Abrahams seed, but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

38 I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

39 They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Iesus saith unto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would do the works of Abraham:

40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told

* Rom.
6, 20.
2 Pet. 2.
19.

CHAP. VIII.

told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

41 He do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, **W**he he not born of fornication, we have no Father, even God.

42 Jesus said unto them, **I**f God were your Father, ye would love me, for I proceeded forth, and came from God: neither came I of my self, but he sent me.

43 **W**hy do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word.

44 * **H**e are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. **W**hen he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. • 1 John 3.8.

45 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

46 **W**hich of you convinceth me of sin: and if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

47 * **H**e that is of God, heareth Gods words: ye therefore hear them not, because ye are not of God. • 1 John 4.6.

48 **T**hen answered the Jews and said unto him, **S**ay we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?

49 Jesus answered, **I** have not a devil: but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

50 And I seek not mine own glory, there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

51 **V**erily, verily I say unto you, **I**f a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

52 **T**hen said the Jews unto him, **N**ow we know that thou hast a devil. **A**braham is dead, and the prophets: and thou sayest, **I**f a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 **A**rt thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?

54 Jesus answered, **I**f I honour my self, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say that he is your God.

S. JOHN.

55 Yet ye have not known him, but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying.

56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?

58 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

59 Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

CHAP. IX.

1 He that was born blinde, is restored to sight;

8 He is brought to the Pharisees. 13 They communicate him. 35 C. silt receiveth him, and he confesseth Christ.

AS soon as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blinde from his birth.

2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blinde?

3 Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

4 I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work.

5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blinde man with the clay,

7 And said unto him, Go wash in the pool of Siloam (which is, by interpretation, Sent) he went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

8 The neighbors therefore, and they which before had seen him, that he was blinde, said, Is not this he that sat and begged?

* Chap.
9.9.

Or,
spread
the clay
upon the
eyes of
the blind
man.

C H A P. IX.

9 Some said, this is he, others said, He is like him: but he said, I am he.

10 Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He answered and said, A man that is called Iesus, made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight.

12 Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

13 ¶ They brought to the Pharisees him that sometime was blinde.

14 And it was the sabbath-day when Iesus made the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, We put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see.

16 Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, how can a man that is a sinner, do such miracles? And there was a division among them.

17 They say unto the blinde man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

18 But the Iewes did not beleefe concerning him, that he had been blinde, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight.

19 And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blinde? how then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them, and said, We know that this our son, and that he was born blinde:

21 But by what means he now seeth, we know not, nor who hath opened his eyes we know not: he is of age, ask him, he shall speak for himself.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the Iewes: for the Iewes had agreed already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue.

23 There.

5. JOHN:

23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age, and him.

24 Then again called they the man that was blinde, and said unto him, Give God the praise, we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas as I was blinde, now I see.

26 Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? will ye also be his disciples?

28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses disciples.

29 We know that God spake unto Moses: as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blinde.

33 If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

Mr. ex-
commu-
nicated
him.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out: and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou beleefe on the Son of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleefe on him?

37 And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I beleefe: and he worshipped him.

39 And Jesus said, For judgement I am come into this world, that they which see not, might see, and that they which see, might be made blinde.

C H A P. X.

40 And some of the Pharisees which were with him, heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blinde, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see, therefore your sin remaineth.

C H A P. X.

1 Christ is the door and the good Shepherd:

24 He proveth by his works that he is the Christ: 39. He escapeth the Jews.

Verily, verily I say unto you, He that entereth not by the dooz into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber.

2 But he that entereth in by the dooz, is the Shepherd of the sheep.

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheep hear his voice, and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leaveth them out.

4 And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him, for they know not the voice of strangers.

6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

7 Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily I say unto you. I am the dooz of the sheep.

8 All that ever came before me, are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

9 I am the dooz, by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and finde pasture.

10 The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

11 I am the good Shepherd: the good Shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.

12 But he that is an hireling, and not the Shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolfe coming

*Isaiah
40.11.
Ezek.
34.23.

S. J O H N.

coming, and leaveth the sheep and flock: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

14 I am the good Shepherd, and know my sheep, and am known of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

16 And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold, them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice: * and there shall be one fold and one Shepherd.

* Isaiah
57. 21.
* Isaiah
40. 7, 8

17 Therefore doth my Father love me, * because I lay down my life that I might take it again.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of my self: I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. * This commandment have I received of my Father.

* Acts 1.
24.

19 There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings:

20 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad: why hear ye him?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blinde?

* Mark
4. 39.

22 And it was at Jerusalem the * feast of the dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomons porch.

He hold
us in
suspence.

24 Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long wilt thou make us doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly.

25 Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Fathers Name, they bear witness of me.

26 But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.

27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I give unto them eternal life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of my hand.

C H A P. XI.

29 My Father which gave them me, is greater than all: and no man is able to pluck them out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

32 Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father: for which of those works do you stone me?

33 The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not, but for blasphemy, and because that thou being a man, makest thyself God.

34 Jesus answered them, * Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? * psal. 82.6.

35 If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken:

36 Say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

38 But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they sought again to take him: but he escaped out of their hand.

40 And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at first baptized: and there he abode.

41 And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man were true.

42 And many believed on him there.

C H A P. XI.

1 Christ raiseth Lazarus, four days buried. 45 many Jews believe. 47 The high priests and pharisees gather a council against him.

NOW a certain man was sick, named Lazarus of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha.

2 (* It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with * Matthe. 26. 7.

S. JOHN.

with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.)

3 Therefore his sister sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick.

4 When Jesus heard that, he said, This sickness is not unto death: but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Jesus loved Martha and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that saith he to his disciples, Let us go into Judea again.

8 His disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee, and goest thou thither again?

9 Jesus answered, are there not twelue hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

11 These things said he, and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I go that I may awake him out of sleep.

12 Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

13 Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.

14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent ye may beleefe:) nevertheless, let us go unto him.

16 Then said Thomas which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples, Let us also go that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had lain in the grave four dayes already.

18 (Now Bethaniam was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off.)

What is
about
two
miles.

C H A P. XI.

19 And Many of the Iewes came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Iesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary late still in the house.

21 Then said Martha unto Iesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee.

23 Iesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again.

24 Martha saith unto him, * I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Iesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.

26 And whosoever lieth, and believeth in me, shall never die. Believest thou this?

27 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord, I believe that thou art the Christ the Son of God, which should come into the world.

28 And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.

29 As soon as she heard that, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Iesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Iesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, laying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

33 Then Iesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Iewes also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled.

34 And said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord come and see.

35 Iesus wept:

* Luke
14. 14.
Chap.
5. 29.
* Chap.
6. 33.

† Gr. he
troubled
himself.

5. JOHN.

36 Then said the Jews, Behold, how he loveth him.

* Chap. 9.6. 37 And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blinde, have caused that even this man should not have died?

38 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it.

39 Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four dayes.

40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they took away the stone from the place where the dead was laid. And Jesus lift up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee, that thou hast heard me.

42 And I know that thou hearest me alwayes, but because of the people which stand by, I said it, that they may beleve that thou hast sent me.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 And he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foot with grave clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Laid him, and let him go.

45 Then many of the Jews which came to Jerusalem, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him.

46 But some of them went their wayes to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a councel, and said, What do we? for this man doth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him, and the Romans shall come, and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, He knoweth nothing at all.

CHAP. XII.

7 50 * Now consider that it is expedient for us, * Chap. that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. 18. 14.

51 And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation:

52 And not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews: but went thence into a countrey near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Jews passover was nigh at hand, and many went out of the countrey up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purifie themselves.

56 Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast?

57 Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he should shew it, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

1 Jesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people flock to see Lazarus. 10 The high priests consult to slay him.

Then Jesus six dayes before the Pasche came to Bethany where Lazarus was, which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper, and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment of Spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odor of the ointment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simons son, which should betray him,

3. JOHN.

* Chap.
33. 39.

5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

6 * This he said, not that he cared for the poor: but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

7 Then said Jesus, Let her alone, against the day of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poor alwayes ye have with you: but me ye have not alwayes.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chief priests consulted, that they might put Lazarus also to death.

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away and believed on Jesus.

* Chap.
21. 8.

12 ¶ On the next day much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem,

13 Took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cryed, Hosanna, blessed is the King of Israel that cometh in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Jesus when he had found a young ass, sat thereon, as it is written,

* Zech.
9. 9.

15 * Fear not, daughter of Sion, behold, thy King cometh sitting on an asses colt.

16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

17 The people therefore that was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? Behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship at the feast:

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which

was

CHAP. XII.

was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus.

22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip told Jesus.

23 And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come that the Son of man should be glorified.

24 Verily verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground, and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

25 * He that loveth his life, shall lose it: and he * Mark 10.39.
that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal.

26 If any man serve me, let him follow me: and where I am, there shall also my servant be: If any man serve me, him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my soul troubled, and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour.

28 Father, glorify thy Name. Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard it, said, that it thundered: others said, An Angel spake to him.

30 Jesus answered, and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes,

31 Now is the judgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out.

32 And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all men unto me.

33 (This he said, signifying what death he should die.)

34 The people answered him, * We have heard, p. 11.
out of the law, that Christ abideth for ever: and 11.4.
how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of man?

35 Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you: walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light, These things

S. JOHN.

spake Iesus. and departed, and did hide himself from them.

37 ¶ But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him:

* Isaiah
53.1.
Rom. 10.
16.

38 That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, * Lord, who hath believed our report: and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

* Matthe.
23. 14.

39 Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again,

40 * We hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart, that they should not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and be converted, and I should heal them.

41 These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

42 ¶ Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also, many believed on him: but because of the Pharisees they did not confesse him, lest they should be put out of the Synagogue:

* Chap. 5
46.

43 * For they loved the praise of men, more then the praise of God.

44 ¶ Iesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me.

* Chap.

2. 18.

* Bhap.

3. 17.

45 And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

46 * I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness.

47 * And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

* Mark

8. 12.

48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: * the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.

49 For I have not spoken of my self, but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment what I should say, and what I should speak.

50 And I know that his commandment is everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore; even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Iesus washing the disciples feet, exhorteth them to humility and charity, 18 foretelleth that

C H A P. XIII:

that Judas should betray him, 36 and Peter, deny him.

NOW * before the feast of the pascosover, when * March, 16.1.
Jesus knew that his hour was come, that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

2 And supper being ended, (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot Simons son to betray him.)

3 Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God:

4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and took a towel, and girded himself.

5 After that he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

6 Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet?

7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.

9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet onely, but also my hands and my head.

10 Jesus saith to him, He that is washed, needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all.

11 For he knew who should betray him, therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

12 So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?

13 Ye call me Master and Lord, and ye say well, for so I am.

14 If I then your Lord and Master have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one anothers feet.

15 For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you.

J. JOAN.

* Matth.
10.24.
chap.
25.20.

16 * Verily, verily I say unto you, The servant is not greater then his Lord, neither he that is sent, greater then he that sent him.

17 If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

* Ps lxx.
41.10.

18 ¶ I speak not of you all, I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, * He that eateth bread with me, hath lift up his heel against me.

¶ Dr. from
hence-
forth.

19 ¶ Now I tell you before it come to at when it is come to passe, ye may beleve that I am he.

* Matth.
10.40.

20 * Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me: and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

* Matth.
26.21.

21 * When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified and said, Verily, verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jesus bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake.

25 He then lying on Jesus breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

¶ Dr.
moesel.

26 Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a kiss when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, the son of Simon.

27 And after the sop, Satan entred into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew, for what intent he spake this unto him.

29 For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy these things that we have need of against the feast: or that he should give something to the poor.

30 He then having received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night.

31 ¶ Therefore when he was gone out, Jesus said,

C H A P. XIV.

said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himself, and shall straightway glorifie him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seeke me,* and as I said unto the Jews,* *Chap. 7. 34.* Whither I go, ye cannot come: so now I say to you. *Chap. 15. 17.*

34 * A new commandment I give unto you. That ye love one another, as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. *Levit. 19. 18. 1 John 4. 11.*

35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter said unto him. Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will * lay down my life for thy sake. *Math. 26. 32.*

38 Jesus answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples, & professeth himself the Way, the Truth, and the Life, and one with the Father.

Let not your hearts be troubled: ye beleebe in God, beleebe also in me.

2 In my Fathers house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you: I go to prepare a place for you.

3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto my self, that where I am, there ye may be also.

4 And whither I go, ye know, and the way ye know.

5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest: and how can we know the way?

6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the Way, and the Truth, and the Life: no man cometh unto the Father but by me.

S. J O H N.

7 If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also; and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us.

9 Jesus saith unto him, Waxe I been so long time with you, and yet hath thou not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me, hath seen the Father, & how sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?

10 Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you, I speak not of my self: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doth the works.

11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works sake.

12 Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do, shall he do also, and greater works then these shall he do, because I go unto my Father.

* Matth.
2.7.

13 * And whatsoever ye shall ask in my Name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son.

14 If ye shall ask anything in my Name, I will do it.

15 ¶ If ye love me, keep my commandments.

16 And I will pray the Father, and ye shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever.

17 Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you.

For, or,
phar,

18 I will not leave you comfortless. I will come to you.

19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more, but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also.

20 At that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I will love

C H A P. XV.

love him, and will manifest my self to him.

22 Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy self unto us, and not unto the world?

23 Jesus answered, and said unto him, If any man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

24 He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which you hear, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, being yet present with you.

26 But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my Name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you, not as the world giveth, give I unto you: let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoyce, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to passe, that when it is come to passe ye might beleve.

30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you; for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.

31 But that the world may know that I love the Father: and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do: arise, let us go hence.

C H A P. XV.

1 The consolation and mutual love between Christ and his members, under the parable of the vine. 18 Comfort in persecution.

I Am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

2 * Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away: and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.

3 * Now

* Mark
13. 13

S. JOHN.

* chap.
13. 10.

3 * Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.

4 Abide in me, and I in you: As the branch cannot bear fruit of it self, except it abide in the vine: no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

5 I am the Vine, ye are the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.

¶ Or,
severed
from me

6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, & it shall be done unto you.

8 Wherein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.

10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love, even as I have kept my Fathers commandments, and abide in his love.

11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, & that your joy might be full.

* chap.
13. 14.
1 Thel.
49.
1 John
3. 11.

12 * This is my commandment, that ye love one another, as I have loved you.

13 Greater love hath no man then this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsover I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not servants, for the servant knoweth not what his Lord doth, but I have called you friends: for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you.

* Matth.
28. 19.

16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that you should go & bring forth fruit, and that your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my Name, he may give it you.

17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.

18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before it hated you.

CHAP. XVI.

19 If ye were of the world, the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 * Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater then the lord: if they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my sayings, they will keep yours also.

21 But all these things will they do unto you for my Names sake, because they know not him that sent me.

22 If I had not come, and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no excuse for their sin.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me, and my Father.

25 But this cometh to passe, that the world might be fulfilled that is written in their Law, * They hated me without a cause.

26 * But when the comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testifie of me.

27 And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples against tribulation, by the promise of the holy Ghost, and by his resurrection and ascension, 23 prayers in Christ Name acceptable to the Father.

These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the Synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever willet you, will think that he doth Gods service.

3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

4 But these things have I told you, that when the

* Chap. 1
12. 16.
Matth.
10. 24.

g. 07.
ex. 112.

* Psalm
35. 19.
* Chap.
14. 26.
Lukes
24. 49.

S. JOHN.

The time shall come, ye may remember that I tolde you of them, And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now, I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Nevertheless, I tell you the truth, It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you: but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

8 And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement.

9 Of sin, because they beleve not on me.

10 Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more.

11 Of judgement, because the prince of this world is judged.

12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot hear them now.

13 Howbeit, when the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself: but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak, and he will shew you things to come.

14 He shall glorifie me, for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew it unto you.

16 A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again a little while, and ye shall see me: because I go to the Father.

17 Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again a little while, and ye shall see me: and because I go to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith.

19 Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among your selves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall

CHAP. XVI.

shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me?

20 Verily, verily I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoyce: And ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy.

21 A woman when she is in travaill, hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world.

22 And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoyce, and your joy no man taketh from you.

23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing: ^{* Matth. 7-7.} Verily, verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my Name, he will give it you.

24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my Name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full.

25 These things have I spoken unto you in ^{10r. parables,} proverbs: the time cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in ^{10r. parables,} proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father.

26 At that day ye shall ask in my Name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you:

27 For the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God,

28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again I leave the world, and go to the Father.

29 His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest not in proverbs. ^{10r. parable,}

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: By this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe?

32 ^{* Matth. 26. 31.} Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, ^{10r. his own house,} that ye shall be scattered every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

33 These things I have spoken unto you, that in me

S. J O H N.

me ye might have peace, in the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer, I have overcome the world.

C H A P. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to glorifie him
6 to preserve his apostles 11 in unitie, 17 and
truth: 23 to glorifie them, and all other be-
leevers.

These words spake Iesus, and lift up his eyes
to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come,
glorifie thy Son, that thy Son also may glorifie
thee.

* Matth.
28.18.

2 * As thou hast given him power over all flesh,
that he should give eternal life to as many as thou
hast given him.

3 And this is life eternal, that they might know
thee the only true God, and Iesus Christ whom
thou hast sent.

4 I have glorified thee on the earth: I have fin-
ished the work which thou gavest me to do.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou me with
thine own self, with the glory which I had with
thee before the world was.

6 I have manifested thy Name unto the men
which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they
were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept
thy word.

7 Now they have known that all things which
soever thou hast given me are of thee.

* Chap.
16.27.

8 For I have given unto them the words which
thou gavest me, and they have received them, * and
have known surely that I came out from thee, and
they have beleevied that thou didst send me.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world:
but for them which thou hast given me, for they are
thine.

10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine:
and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but they
are in the world, and I come to thee. O my Father,
keep through thine own Name, those whom thou
hast given me, that they may be one, as we are.

C H A P. XVII.

12 While I was with them in the world I kept them in thy Name: those that thou gapest me, I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition: * that the scripture might be fulfilled. * Psalm

13 And now come I to thee, and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy full, filled in themselves, 109.7.

14 I have given them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world,

17 Sanctifie them through thy truth, thy word is truth.

18 As thou hast sent me into the world: even so have I also sent them into the world.

19 And for their sakes I sanctifie myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth. John. truly sanctified.

20 Neither pray I for these alone; but for them also which shall believe on me through their word.

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us, that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gapest me, I have given them: that they may be one, even as we are one,

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

24 * Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am, that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. * Chap. 13.26.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy Name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.

C H A P.

3. JOHN.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Judas betrayeth Jesus. 6 The officers fall in the ground. 12 Jesus is taken and led unto Annas and Caiaphas.

* Matth.
26.37.

When Jesus had spoken these words, * he went forth with his disciples, over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his disciples.

2 And Judas also which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples.

* Matth.
26.47.

3 * Judas then having received a band of men, and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons.

4 Jesus therefore knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye?

5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 Alsoon then as he had said unto them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth.

8 Jesus answered, I have told you that I am he: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way:

* Chap.
17.12.

9 That the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, * Of them which thou gavest me, have I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a sword, drew it, and smote the high priests servant, and cut off his right ear: the servants name was Malchus.

¶ And
Annas
sent
Christ
bound
unto
Caiaphas
the
high
priest,
vers. 24.

11 Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath: The cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

12 Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews took Jesus and bound him.

13 And led him away to Annas first (for he was father in law to Caiaphas) which was the high priest that same year. ||

14 * And

CHAP. XVIII.

14 * Now Caiphas was he which gave coun- Chap.
sel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man 11.30.
should die for the people.

15 ¶ And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and * Matth.
so did another disciple: that disciple was known 29.5.
unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into
the palace of the high priest.

16 But Peter stood at the dooz without. Then
went out that other disciple which was known un-
to the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the
dooz, and brought in Peter.

17 Then saith the damoel that kept the dooz
unto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans dis-
ciples? He saith, I am not.

18 And the servants and officers stood there,
who had made a fire of coals (for it was cold) and
they warmed themselves; and Peter stood with
them, and warmed himself.

19 ¶ The high priest then asked Jesus of his
disciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the
world, I never taught in the synagogue, and in the
temple, whether the Jews alwayes resort: and in
secret have I said nothing:

21 Why askest thou me? ask them which heard
me, what I have said unto them; behold, they know
what I said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, one of the offi-
cers which stood by, stroke Jesus with the palm of
his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest
so? [100. with
a rod.]

23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil,
bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest
thou me?

24 * Now Annas had sent him bound unto * Matth.
Caiphas the high priest. 26.57.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himself:
* they said therefore unto him, Art not thou also one
of disciples? He denyed it, and said, I am not. * Matth.
26. 69.

26 One of the servants of the high priest (being
his kinsman whose ear Peter cut off) saith, Did not
I see thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter

5. JOHN.

27 Peter then dinped again, and immediach the cock crew.

* Matth.
27. 2.
18. Pil-
lates
house.
* Acts
26, 28.

28 ¶ Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of iudgement: and it was early, * and they themselves went not into the iudgement hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eat the pasciover.

29 Pilate then went out unto them, and said What accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him unto thee.

31 Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and iudge him according to your law. The Iesus therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death:

* Matth.
20. 19.

32 * That the saying of Iesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

* Matth.
27. 31.

33 * Then Pilate entred into the iudgement hall again, and called Iesus, and said unto him, Art thou the king of the Iews?

34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thy self? or do others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, am I a Iew? thine own nation, and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me; What hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Iews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Iesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth: every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.

38 Pilate said unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Iews, and said unto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

* Matth.
27. 15.

39 * But ye have a custom that I should release

C H A P. XIX:

unto you one at the pasche: will ye therefore that
I release unto you the king of the Iewes?

40 * Then cried they all again, saying, Not * Acts 3.
14.
this man, but Barrabbas. Now Barrabbas was
a robber.

C H A P. XIX.

1 Christ is scourged, crowned with thorns, and
beaten, 19 delivered to be crucified. 29 He di-
eth. 38 He is buried.

Then * Pilate therefore took Iesus, and scour- * March.
27.28.
ged him.

2 And the souldiers platted a crown of thorns,
and put it on his head, and they put on him a pur-
ple robe.

3 And said, Hail king of the Iewes: and they
knote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith
unto them, Behold I bring him forth to you, that
ye may know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Iesus forth, wearing the crown
of thorns, and the purple robe: and Pilate saith
unto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chief priests therefore and officers
saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucifie him, cruci-
fie him. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and
crucifie him, for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Iewes answered him, We have a law,
and by our law he ought to die: because he made
himself the Son of God.

8 When Pilate therefore heard that saying,
he was the more afraid.

9 And went again into the iudgement hall, and
saith unto Iesus, Whence art thou? But Iesus
gave him no answer.

10 Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou
not unto me? Knowest thou not that I have power
to crucifie thee, and have power to release thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest have no power
at all against me, except it were given thee from
above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee, hath
the greater sin.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release
him

S. JOHN.

him, but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou be this man go, thou art not Cæsars friend: who soever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cæsar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat, in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King.

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucifie your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cæsar.

* Matth.
27.31.

16 ¶ Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified: and they took Jesus and led him away.

17 And he bearing his crosse went forth into a place called the place of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the crosse. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.

20 This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified, was nigh to the city, and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latine.

21 Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Jews: but that he said, I am king of the Jews.

22 Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

* Matth.
27.35.

23 ¶ Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, (and made four parts, to every soldier a part) and also his coat. Now the coat was without seam, || woven from the top throughout.

¶ Or,
wrought

* Psal.
137.

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us not rent it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith

The

C H A P. XIX.

They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast lots. These things therefore the souldiers did.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the crosse of Iesus, his mother, and his mothers sister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 ¶ When Iesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son.

27 ¶ Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother. And from that hour, that disciple took her unto his own home.

28 ¶ After this, Iesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, * that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

29 ¶ Now there was set a vessel full of vineger: and they filled a sponge with vineger, and put it upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth.

30 ¶ When Iesus therefore had receiued the vineger, he said, It is finished, and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

31 ¶ The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the crosse on the sabbath-day (for that sabbath-day was an high day) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, & that they might be taken away.

32 ¶ Then came the souldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him.

33 ¶ But when they came to Iesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs.

34 ¶ But one of the souldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

35 ¶ And he that saw it, bare record, and his record is true, and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might beleue.

36 ¶ For these things were done, * that the scripture should be fulfilled, * A bone of him shall not be broken.

37 ¶ And again, another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

28 ¶ And

12.
Clop.

* Psal.
69. 22.

* Num. 9.

12.
* Exod.
12. 45.
* Psal.

34. 21.
* Zech.

12. 10.

S. JOHN.

• Matth
27.57.

38 ¶ And after this, Joseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews) besought Pilate he might take away the body of Jesus, and he gave him leave: he came therefore, and took the body of Jesus.

39 And there came also Nicodemus, which the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound weight.

40 Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes, with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury:

41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 There laid they Jesus therefore, because the Jews preparation day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

C H A P. XX.

1 Mary cometh to the sepulchre, 3 so do Peter and John. 11 Jesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene, 19 and to his disciples. 24 Thomas his incredulity and confession.

• Matth.
28.1.
Mark
16.1.

The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre.

• Chap.
13.23. &
21.20.

2 Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together, and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And he stooping down, and looking in, the linen clothes lying, yet went he not in.

6 Then cometh Simon Peter following, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the clothes lie,

C H A P. XX.

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it self.

8 Then went that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and beleeved.

9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead.

10 Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

11 But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, and looked into the sepulchre,

12 And seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had layen:

13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when she had thus said, she turned her self back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus.

15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman why weepest thou: whom seekest thou? She supposing him to be the gardiner, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have boyn him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned her self, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father, and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

19 ¶ Then the same day at evening, being the first day of the week, when the doores were shut, where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus, and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you.

5. JOHN.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you: as my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the holy Ghost.

* Math.
28. 18.

23 * Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them, and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: then came Jesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you.

27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands, and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not faithlesse, but believing.

28 And Thomas answered, and said unto him, My Lord, and my God.

29 Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

* Chap.
21. 25.

30 ¶ * And many other signes truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book:

31 But these are written that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ the Son of God, and that believing ye might have life through his Name.

CHAP. XXI.

1 Christ appeareth to his disciples, being a fishing. 12 He dineth with them: 15 commandeth Peter to feed his Lambs: 18 and foretelleth Peters death.

CHAP. XXI.

After these things Iesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and on this wise shewed he himself.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathaneel of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing, They say unto him, we also go with thee. They went forth and entred into a ship immediately, and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Iesus.

5 Then Iesus saith unto them, ¶ Chilopen, have ye any meat? They answered him, No.

6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall finde. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Iesus loved, saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fishers coat unto him, (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came in a little ship, (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

2 A lloon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread.

10 Iesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught.

11 Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus saith unto them, Come and dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Iesus then cometh, and taketh bread and giveth them, and fish likewise.

5. JOHN.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shew-
ed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen
from the dead.

15 So when they had dined, Iesus saith to
Simon Peter, Simon son of Jonas lovest thou me
more then these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord, thou
knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed
my lambs.

16 He saith to him again the second time, Simon
son of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him,
Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith
unto him, Feed my sheep.

17 He said unto him the third time, Simon son
of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved, be-
cause he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou
me? And he said unto him, Lord thou knowest all
things, thou knowest that I love thee. Iesus saith
unto him, Feed my sheep.

18 Verily, verily I say unto thee, When thou
wast young, thou girdedst thy self, and walkest whi-
ther thou wouldest, but when thou shalt be old, thou
shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird
thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake he, signifying by what death he
should glorifie God. And when he had spoken this,
he saith unto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, seeth the disciple
*whom Iesus loved, following, which also leaned
on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he
that betrayeth thee?

* Chap.
13. 23.
and 20. 2.

21 Peter seeing him, saith to Iesus, Lord, and
what shall this man do?

22 Iesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry
till I come, what is that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went this saying abroad among the bre-
thren, that that disciple should not die: yet Iesus
said not unto him, He shall not die: but, If I will
that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?

24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these
things, and wrote these things, and we know that
his testimony is true.

* Chap.
19.

25 And there are also many other things which

CHAP. I.

Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world it self could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

CHAP. I.

1 A repetition of part of Christs history before and after his passion 9 Of his ascension. 11 The apostles chule Matthias in the place of Judas.

Hereafter treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach,

2 Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles, whom he had chosen.

3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs; being seen of them fourty daies, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God:

4 And he being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, saith he, ye have heard of me.

5 For John truly baptized with water, but ye shall be baptized with the holy ghost, not many daies hence.

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?

7 And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times, or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power.

8 But ye shall receive power after that the holy Ghost is come upon you, and ye shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

9 And when he had spoken these things, while

10. eating together with them.
* Luke 24. 49.
* Math. 3. 11.

* Chap. 2. 1.
12. the power of the holy Ghost coming upon you.
* Luke 24. 31.

THE ACTS.

they beheld, he was taken up, and a cloud receiued him out of their sight.

10 And while they looked stedfastly toward heauen, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel.

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heauen? the same Iesus, which is taken up from you into heauen, shall so come in like manner as ye haue seen him go into heauen.

12 Then returned they unto Ierusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Ierusalem a sabbath dayes journey.

13 And when they were come in, they went up into an upper room, where abode both Peter, and James, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip, and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon Zelotes, and Judas the brother of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesus, and with his brethren.

15 And in those dayes Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said, (the number of names together were about an hundred & twenty.)

* Psal.
41. 8.

15 Men and brethren, this scripture must needs haue been fulfilled, * which the holy ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Iudas, which was guide to them that took Iesus.

17 For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry.

* Math.
27. 7.

18 * Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity, and falling headlong he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Ierusalem, insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, the field of blood.

* Psal.
68. 26.
* Psal.
109. 7.
Blessed
of thee or,
charge.

20 * For it is written in the book of psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: * and his bishoprick let another take.

21 Wherefore of these men which haue companied

CHAP. II.

nied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

22 Beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witnesse with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou Lord, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

26 And they gave forth their lots, and the lot fell upon Matthias, and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 The apostles filled with the holy Ghost, and speaking divers languages, are admired by some, and derided by others. 14 whom Peter disprove. h. 47 He baptizeth those that were converted.

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues, like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.

6 Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, & were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.

7 And they were all amazed, and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak, Galileans?

1 Cr.
when his
voice was
made.
1 Cr.
troubled
in mind

THE ACTS.

8 And how hear we every man in our owne tongue, wherein we were boyn :

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Lybia, about Cyrene, and Strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes,

11 Cretes, and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this :

13 Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine

14 But Peter standing up with the eleven, lift up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be ye known unto you, and hearken to my words :

15 For these are not drunken as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day.

* Joel

2.28.

Esa. 44.3.

16 * But this is that which is spoken by the prophet Joel,

17 And it shall come to passe in the last dayes (saith God) I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh : and your sons and your daughters shall prophesse, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams.

18 And on my servants, and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those dayes of my spirit, and they shall prophesse :

19 And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signes in the earth beneath : blood and fire, and vapor of smok.

* Joel.

2.31.

20 * The sun shall be turned into darknesse, and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

* Rom.

10.13.

21 * And it shall come to passe, that whosoever shall call on the Name of the Lord shall be saved,

22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words, Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you, by miracles, wonders, and signes which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye your selves also knowe.

C H A P. II.

23 Him being delivered by the determinate counsell and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain :

24 Whom God hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death : because it was not possible that he should be holden of it.

25 For David speaketh concerning him, * *Psalm 139.* I foresaw the Lord alwayes before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved.

26 Therefore did my heart rejoyce, and my tongue was glad : moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope,

27 Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see corruption.

28 Thou hast made known to me the wayes of life, thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance.

29 Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you * of the patriarch David, for he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. *Acts 13. 36.*

30 Therefore being a prophet, * and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loynes according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ, to sit on his throne : *Acts 13. 37.*

31 He seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ, * that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. *Acts 13. 38.*

32 This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this which ye now see and hear.

34 For David is not ascended into the heavens, but he saith himself, * *Psalm 110. 1.* The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

35 Untill I make thy foes thy footstool :

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter, and to

THE ACTS.

the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do?

38 Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the holy ghost.

39 For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save your selves from this untoward generation.

41 ¶ Then they that gladly received his word, were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls.

42 And they continued steadfastly in the apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43 And fear came upon every soul: and many wonders and signes were done by the apostles.

44 And all that believed were together, and had all things common.

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

46 And they continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat with gladness and singleness of heart.

47 Praising God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily such as should be saved.

CHAP. III.

1 Peter with John restored a lame man to his feet.

2 How the cure was wrought. 3 The people are reprehended, 4 & exhorted to repentance.

NOW Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour.

2 And a certain man lame from his mothers womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple.

CHAP. III.

3 Who seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an alms.

4 And Peter fastning his eyes upon him, with John, said, Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive some thing of them.

6 Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none, but such as I have, give I thee: in the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lift him up: and immediately his feet and ancle bones received strength.

8 And he leaping up, stood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walking, and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the Beautifull gate of the temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch, that is called Solomons, greatly wondering.

12 And when Peter saw it, he answered unto the people, Ye men of Israel, why marvell ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holinesse we had made this man to walk?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Iesus, whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him go.

14 * But ye denied the holy One, and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you;

15 And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses.

16 And his Name, through faith in his Name, hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath given him this

* Matth.
27.30.
107,
without

THE ACTS.

perfect soundnesse in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wote that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before has shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you.

21 Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.

* Deut.
18. 15.
Chap. 7.
37.

22 * For Moses truly said unto the fathers, A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me, him shall ye hear in all things whatsoever he shall say unto you.

23 And it shall come to passe, that every soul which will not hear that Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these dayes.

* Gen.
12. 3.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with your fathers, * saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.

26 Unto you first God having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. II II.

I The rulers offended with Peters sermon, 4 imprison him and John: 5 they examine them 8 Peters boldnesse. 13 They are commanded to preach no more in Christs Name.

¶ Of
rulers,

AND as they spake unto the people, the priests and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came upon them;

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jesus the resurrection from the dead.

3 And

C H A P. IIII.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put them in hold unto the next day: for it was now eventide.

4 Notwithstanding many of them which heard the word, believed, and the number of the men was about five thousand.

5 And it came to passe on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes,

6 And Annas the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were gathered together at Jerusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the midst they asked, By what power or by what name have ye done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy Ghost said unto them, Ye rulers of the people, & elders of Israel,

9 If we this day be examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole,

10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the Name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

11 * This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner. * Psalm

12 Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved. * Acts 4. 12.

13 And when they saw the boldnesse of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled, and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jesus.

14 And beholding a man which was healed standing with them, they could say nothing against it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred among themselves,

16 Saying, What shall we do to these men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them, is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot deny it.

17 But

THE ACTS.

17 But that it speake no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speake henceforth to no man in this Name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them not to speake at all, nor teach in the Name of Iesus.

19 But Peter and John answered, and said unto them, Whether it be right in the sight of God, to hearken unto you more then unto God, iudge ye.

20 For we cannot but speake the things which we have seen and heard.

21 So when they had further threatned them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people: for all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was above forty yeeres old, on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.

23 And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders, had said unto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lift up their voice to God with one accord, and said, Lord, thou art God, which hast made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all that in them is:

• psalm
2, 1,

25 * Who by the mouth of thy servant David hast said, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things?

26 The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ.

27 For of a truth against thy holy child Iesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel were gathered together;

28 For to do whatsoeuer thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done.

29 And now, Lord, behold their threatenings, and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldnesse they may speake thy word.

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heal: and that signes and wonders may be done by the Name of thy holy child Iesus.

31 And when they had prayed, the place was shaken

C H A P. V.

Asken where they were assembled together, and they were all filled with the holy ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldnesse.

32 And the multitude of them that believed, were of one heart, and of one soul: neither said any of them, that ought of the things which he possessed was his own, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gave the apostles witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus, and great grace was upon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessours of lands, or houses, sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid them down at the apostles feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

36 And Joseph, whose by the apostles was surnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, the son of consolation) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus,

37 Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the apostles feet.

C H A P. V.

1 Ananias and Sapphira fall down dead. 12 The apostles work many miracles. 17 They are imprisoned, 19 delivered by an angel, 31 in danger to be killed, but Gamaliel keepeth them alive.

BUt a certain man, named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession,

2 And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privie to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles feet.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart, to lie to the holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land?

Gr. to deceive.

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell down, and

THE ACTS.

and gabe up the ghost: and great fear came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out and buried him.

7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much. And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said unto her, Who is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband, are at the doore, & shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and peeled up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.

12 And by the hands of the apostles were many signes and wonders wrought among the people, (and they were all with one accord in Solomons porch,

13 And of the rest durst no man joyn himself to them: but the people magnified them.

14 And beleivers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.)

¶ Or, in every street.

15 Insomuch that they brought forth the sick lying to the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one.

¶ Or, service.

17 Then the high priest rose up, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadducees) and were filled with indignation,

18 And laid their hands on the apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened

CHAP. V.

the prison doozs, and brought them forth, and said,

20 Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people, all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the temple early in the morning, and taught: but the high priest came, and they that were with him, and called the council together, and all the senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The prison truly found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing without before the doozs, but when we had opened, we found no men within.

24 Now when the high priest, and the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison, are standing in the temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence: (for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned.)

27 And when they had brought them, they set them before the council, and the high priest asked them,

28 Saying, * Did not we straitly command you, that you should not teach in this Name? and behold, Chap. 4. 13. ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans blood upon us.

29 ¶ Then Peter and the other disciples answered, and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.

30 The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree:

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand, to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins.

32 And we are his witnesses of these things, and so is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

33 ¶ When

THE ACTS.

33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel to slay them.

34 Then stood there up one in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little space,

35 And said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to your selves, what ye intend to do as touching these men:

36 For before these dayes, rose up Theodas, boasting himself to be some body; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joyned themselves: who was slain, and all as many as obeyed him, were scattered and brought to nought.

*Mr. Be-
leved.*

37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the dayes of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also perished, and all, even as many as obeyed him, were disperſed.

38 And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone; for if this counsel or this work be of men, it will come to nought.

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it, lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they should not speak in the Name of Jesus, and let them go.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his Name.

42 And daily in the temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

CHAP. VI.

¶ The apostles care for the poor, and for preaching the word 3 Seven men chosen for deacons, of whom Stephen was one, and is taken, 13 and is falsely accused.

AND in those dayes, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministration.

2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the disciples

CHAP. VI.

disciples unto them, and said, Is it not reason that we should leave the word of God, and serve tables.

3 Wherefore brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost, and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business.

4 But we will give our selves continually to prayer, and to the ministry of the word.

5 And the saying pleased the whole multitude: and they chose Stephen, a man full of faith, and of the holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch.

6 Whom they set before the apostles: and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased, and the number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly, and a great company of the priests were obedient to the faith.

8 And Stephen full of faith and power, did great wonders and miracles among the people.

9 And then there arose certain of the synagogue, which is called the synagogue of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia, and of Asia, disputing with Stephen:

10 And they were not able to resist the wisdom, and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men, which said, We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses and against God.

12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon him, and caught him, and brought him to the council:

13 And set up false witnesses, which said, This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place, and the law.

14 For we have heard him say, that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the customs which Moses delivered us.

15 And all that sat in the council, looking stedfastly on him, saw his face as it had been the face of an angel.

THE ACTS.

CHAP. VII.

8 Steven answereth to his accusers. 51 He reprehendeth the peoples rebellion and murdering of Christ? 54 thereupon they stone him to death.

Then said the high priest, Are these things so? 2 And he said, Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken: The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran,

* Gen.
12.1.

3 And said unto him, * Set thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran: and from thence when his father was dead, he removed him into this land wherein ye now dwell.

5 And he gave him none inheritance in it, no more much as to set his foot on: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child.

6 And God spake on this wise, that his seed should sojourn in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage, and intreat them evil four hundred years.

7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge said God: and after that shall they come forth and serve me in this place.

* Gen.
27.7.

* Gen.
21.3.

* Gen.
25.26.

* Gen.
29.31.

* Gen.
37.28.

* Gen.
41.37.

8 * And he gave him the covenant of circumcision: * and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day: * and Isaac begat Jacob, * and Jacob begat the twelve patriarchs.

9 * And the patriarchs moved with envy, sold Joseph into Egypt: but God was with him,

10 And delivered him out of all his afflictions, * and gave him favor and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt: and he made him governor over Egypt, and all his house.

11 Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no sustenance.

* Gen.
41.1.

12 * But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first.

13 * And

CHAP. VII.

13 * And at the second time Joseph was made * Gen.
known to his brethren, and Josephs kindred was 45.4.
made known unto Pharaoh.

14 Then sent Joseph and called his father Ja-
cob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen
souls.

15 * So Jacob went down into Egypt, * and * Gen.
died, he and our fathers, 45.5.

16 And were carried over into Sichem, and laid
in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of
money of the sons of Emor the father of Sichem. * Gen. 49.33.

17 But when the time of the promise drew nigh,
which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew
and multiplied in Egypt,

18 Till another king arose, which knew not
Joseph.

19 The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and
evil intreated our fathers, so that they cast out their
young children, to the end they might not live.

20 * In which time Moses was born, and * was * Exod.
|| exceeding fair, and nourished up in his fathers 2.2.
house three moneths: * Hebr.

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs
daughter took him up, and nourished him for her 11.23.
own son. 10r. 12r. to God.

22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of
the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in
deeds.

23 And when he was full forty years old, it
came into his heart to visit his brethren the chil-
dren of Israel:

24 * And seeing one of them suffer wrong, he * Exod.
defended him, and avenged him that was oppressed, 2.11.
and smote the Egyptian:

25 For he supposed his brethren would have un-
derstood, how that God by his hand would deliver
them: but they understood not.

29 * And the next day he shewed himself unto * Exod.
them as they krobe, and would have set them at one 2.13.
again, saying, Sirs, ye are brethren, why do ye
wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust
him

THE ACTS:

him atwey, saying, Who made thee a ruler, and a judge over us?

28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didst the Egyptian pesterday?

29 Then Ken Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons.

* Exod.
3.2.

30 * And when fourty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sina, an angel of the Lord, in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight: and as he drew near to behold it, the voyce of the Lord came unto him,

32 Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, & durst not behold.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

34 I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them: And now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send to be a ruler and a deliverer by the hands of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.

* Exod.
7.9.

* Exod.

16.1.

* Deut.

34.10.

34.11.

my self

* Exod.

29.3.

36 * We brought them out, after that he had shewed wonders and signes in the land of Egypt, and in the Red-sea, * and in the wilderness fourty years.

37 * This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel, * A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, A like unto me: him shall ye hear.

38 * This is he that was in the church in the wilderness with the angel, which spake to him in the mount Sina, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to give unto us.

39 To whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt.

* Exod.
32.1.

42 * Saying unto Aaron, Make us gods to go before us.

CHAP. VII:

before us: for as for this Moses, which brought us out of the land of Egypt, we wot not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calf in those dayes, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoyced in the works of their own hands.

42 Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven,* as it is written in the book of the prophets. O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts and sacrifices, by the space of forty yeeres in the wilderness? * Amos 5. 25.

43 Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them; and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, * that he should make it according to the fashion that he had seen: * Exod. 25. 40.

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the dayes of David,

46 Who found favor before God, and desired to have a tabernacle for the Son of Jacob,

47 * But Solomon built him an house.

48 * Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands, as saith the prophet, * 1 Chr. 17. 12.

49 Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: What house will ye build me, saith the Lord? Or what is the place of my rest? * Chap. 17. 37.

50 Hath not mine hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Ye stiff-necked, and uncircumcised in heart and ears; ye do alwayes resist the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so to ye.

52 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the just One, of whom ye have been now the betrayers and murderers:

53 Who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were

THE ACTS.

cut to the heart, and they gnashed on him with their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord.

58 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witnesses laid down their clothes at a young mans feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Stephen, calling upon God, and saying, Lord Jesus receive my spirit.

60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleep.

CHAP. VIII.

1 The church is planted in Samaria by Philip.

14 confirmed and enlarged by Peter and John.

26 Philip is sent to baptize the Ethiopian eunuch.

AS Saul was consenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution on against the church which was at Jerusalem, and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea, and Samaria, except the apostles.

2 And devout men carried Stephen to his burial, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul he made havock of the church, entering into every house, and haling men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For unclean spirits crying with loud voices came out of many that were possessed with them.

C H A P. VIII.

and many taken with pailles, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that city.

9 But there was a certain man, called Simon, which beforetime in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was some great one.

10 To whom they all gave heed from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleved Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the Name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 Then Simon himself beleved also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were done.

14 Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John.

15 Who when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the holy Ghost.

16 (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus:)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles hands, the holy Ghost was given, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said unto him, Thy money perish with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter, for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and

THE ACTS.

pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity.

24 Then answered Simon and said, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me.

25 And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritanes.

26 And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying, Arise, and go toward the south, unto the way that goeth down from Jerusalem unto Gaza, which is desert.

27 And he arose, and went: and behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had come to Jerusalem to worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his chariot, read Eneas the prophet.

29 Then the Spirit said unto Philip, Go near, and join thyself to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Eneas, and said, Understandest thou what thou readest?

31 And he said, How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come up, and sit with him.

32 The place of the scripture which he read, was this, * He was led as a sheep to the slaughter, and like a lamb dumb before the shearer, so opened he not his mouth:

* Isaiah
53-7.

33 In his humiliation his judgement was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.

CHAP. IX.

36 And as they went on their way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch said See, here is water, what doth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I beleve that Iesus Christ is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch, and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch saw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing throught, he preached in all the cities till he came to Cesarea.

CHAP. IX.

1 Saul going toward Damascus, 4 is stricken to the earth, 10 is called to his apostleship, 18 baptized by Ananias, 20 he preacheh
Christ.

AND Saul yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest:

2 And desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem.

3 And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus: and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heaven.

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice, saying unto him, Saul, Saul, why persecuest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecuest: it is late for thee to kick against the pricks.

6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.

7 And the men which journeyed with him, stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.

THE ACTS.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three dayes without sight, and neither did eat nor drink.

10 And there was a certain discipule at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord.

11 And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and enquire in the house of Judas, for one called Saul of Tarsus: for behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath seen in a vision a man named Ananias, coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy saints at Jerusalem:

14 And here he hath authoritie from the chief priests, to binde all that call on thy Name.

15 But the Lord said unto him, Go thy way: for he is a cholen vessel unto me, to bear my Name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him how great things he must suffer for my Names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the house, and putting his hands on him, said, Brother Saul, the Lord, (even Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it had been scales, and he received sight forthwith, and arose, and was baptized.

19 And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was Saul certain dayes with the disciples which were at Damascus.

20 And straightway he preached Christ in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard him, were amazed, and

CHAP. IX.

said, Was not this he that destroyed them which call-
ed on this Name in Jerusalem, and came hither
for that intent, that he might bring them bound un-
to the chief priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength,
and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damas-
cus, proving that this is very Christ.

23 And after that many dayes were fulfilled,
the Jews took counsel to kill him.

24 * But their laying await was known of ^{* 2 Cor.}
Saul: and they watched the gates day and night ^{11. 32.}
to kill him.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let
him down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he
assayed to joyn himself to the disciples, but they
were all afraid of him, and beleebed not that he was
a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought him
to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had
seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to
him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus
in the Name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them coming in, and going
out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the Name of the Lord
Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they
went about to slay him.

30 Which when the brethren knew, they brought
him down to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tar-
sus.

31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Ju-
dea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified,
and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the
comfort of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 And it came to passe, as Peter passed tho-
roughout all quarters, he came down also to the saines
which dwelt at Lydda:

33 And there he found a certain man, named
Aeneas, which had kept his bed eight yeers, and
was sick of the palsey.

34 And Peter said unto him, Aeneas, Jesus

THE ACTS.

Thou maketh thee whole: arise, and shake thy bed.
And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works, and alms-deeds which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not delay to come to them.

39. he
grieved.

39 ¶ Then Peter arose, and went with them: when he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down and prayed, and turning him to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, she sat up.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lift her up: and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive.

42 And it was known throughout all Joppa, and many believed in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe, that he tarried many dayes in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

1 Cornelius sendeth for Peter, 11 who by a vision, 15, 20 is taught not to despise the Gentiles.

34 Peter preacheth. 44 The holy Ghost falleth on the hearers: 48 They are baptized.

There was a certain man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band,

2 A devout man, and one that feared God, with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway:

C H A P. X.

3 He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth
hou^r of the day, an angel of God coming in to him^e
and saying unto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid,
and said, What is it, Lord? And he said unto him,
Thy pray^{rs} and thine alms are come up for a me-
morial before God.

5 And now send men to Toppa, and call for one
Simon, whose surname is Peter:

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose
house is by the sea side; he shall tell thee what thou
oughtest to do.

7 And when the angel which spake unto Cor-
nelius, was departed, he called two of his household
servants, and a devout soldier of them that waited
on him continually.

8 And when he had declared all these things
unto them, he sent them to Toppa.

9 ¶ On the morrow, as they went on their jour-
ney, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up
upon the house to pray, about the sixth hour.

10 And he became very hungry, and would have
eaten: but while they made ready, he fell into a
trance,

11 And saw heaven opened, and a certain vessel
descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet,
knit at the four corners, and let down to the earth:

12 Wherein were all manner of four-footed
beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping
things, and fowls of the air.

13 And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter:
kill, and eat.

14 But Peter said, Not so, Lord: for I have
never eaten any thing that is common or unclean.

15 And the voice spake unto him again the se-
cond time, What God hath cleansed, that call not
thou common.

16 This was done thrice: and the vessel was
received up again into heaven.

17 Now while Peter doubted in himself, what
this vision, which he had seen, should mean: be-
hold, the men which were sent from Cornelius, had
made

THE ACTS.

made enquiry for Simons house, and stood before the gate,

18 And called, and asked whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, where lodged there.

19 While Peter thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him, Behold, three men seek thee.

20 Arise therefore, and get thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

21 Then Peter went down to the men, which were sent unto him from Cornelius, and said, Behold, I am he whom ye seek: what is the cause wherefore ye are come?

22 And they said, Cornelius the centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel, to send for thee into his house, and to hear words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them: and on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entered into Caesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and near friends.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter took him up, saying, Stand up, I my self also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew, to keep company, or come unto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that I should not call any man common or unclean.

29 Therefore came I unto you without gain, saying, as soon as I was sent for. I ask therefore for what intent ye have sent for me.

30 And Cornelius said, Four dayes ago I was fasting until this hour, and at the ninth hour I prayed in my house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing,

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine

CHAP. X.

thine alms are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Toppa, and call hither Simon, whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house of one Simon a Tanner, by the sea side, who when he cometh, shall speak unto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I sent to thee, and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, * Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons; * Deut; 10. 17. Rom. 2. 11.

35 But in every nation, he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him. 1 Pet. 1. 17.

36 The word which God sent unto the children of Israel, preaching peace by Jesus Christ (he is Lord of all)

37 That word (I say) you know, which was published throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John preached:

38 How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power, who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which he did, both in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem, whom they slew and hanged on a tree:

40 Him God raised up the third day, and shewed him openly.

41 Not to all the people, but unto witnesses chosen before of God, even to us, who did eat and drink with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he which was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead.

43 * To him give all the prophets witness, that through his Name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins. * Jerem. 23. 34. Micha 7. 18.

44 ¶ While Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which believed, were

THE ACTS.

were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was poured out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speak with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the holy Ghost as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain dayes.

CHAP. XI.

1 Peter accused for going in to the Gentiles.

5 Maketh his defence, 18 which is accepted,

19 The gospel is spread. 26 At Antioch the Disciples first called Christians.

AS the apostles, and brethren that were in Judea, heard that the Gentiles had also received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of the circumcision, contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the beginning, & expounded it by order unto them, saying,

5 I was in the city of Toppa praying, and in a trance I saw a vision, a certain vessel descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from heaven by four corners, and it came even to me.

6 Upon the which when I had fastned mine eyes, I considered, and saw four-footed beasts of the earth, and wilde beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

7 And I heard a voice saying unto me, Arise, Peter, slay, and eat.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entred into my mouth.

9 But the voice answered me again from heaven, What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn

CHAP. XI.

nation up again into heaven.

11 And behold, immediately there were three men already come into the house where I was, sent from Cesarea unto me.

12 And the Spirit had me go with them, nothing doubting: Whereover, these six brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the mans house:

13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house, which stood and said unto him, Send men to Toppa, and call for Simon, whose surname is Peter:

14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou, and all thy house shall be saved.

15 And as I began to speak, the holy Ghost fell on them, * as on us at the beginning.

* Chap. 2. 4.

16 Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that he said, * John indeed baptized with water: but ye shall be baptized with the holy Ghost.

* John 1. 26.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift, as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ: what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.

19 ¶ Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecution that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice, and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none, but unto the Jews only.

* Chap. 2. 1.

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus, and Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch, spake unto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Jesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them, and a great number believed, and turned unto the Lord.

22 ¶ Then tidings of these things came unto the ears of the church, which was in Jerusalem: and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch:

23 Who when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord.

24 For

THE ACTS.

24 For he was a good man, and full of the holy Ghost, and of faith: and much people was added unto the Lord.

25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul.

¶ Or,
in the
church.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole year they assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people, and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

27 ¶ And in these dayes came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch.

28 And there stood up one of them, named Agabus, and signified by the spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world: which came to passe in the dayes of Claudius Cesar.

29 Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

1 Herod persecuteth the christians, killeth James, imprisoneth Peter, who is delivered by an angel. 20 Herods pride, and miserable death.

¶ Or,
began.

NOW about that time Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church.

2 And he killed James the brother of John with the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also, (Then was the dayes of unleavened bread.)

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

¶ Or,
instant
and earnest
prayer
was made

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison, but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him.

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains, and he kept

C H A P. XII.

keepers before the dooz kept the prison :

7 And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison : and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands.

8 And the angel said unto him, Gird thy self, and bind on thy sandals : and so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, & follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed him, and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel : but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the citie, which opened to them of his own accord : and they went out, and passed on thorough one street, and forthwith the angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark, where many were gathered together, praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the dooz of the gate, a damsel came y to hearken, named Rhoda.

14 And when she knew Peters voice, she opened not the gate for gladnesse, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But he constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking : and when they had opened the door, and saw him, they were astonished.

17 But he beckning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison : and he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now as soon as it was day, there was no small

Rir

10r, 20
ask who
was
there.

THE ACTS.

He among his soldiers what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and there abode.

10r. bare
an ho-
Rile
mide
intend-
ing war.
+Gr. that
was over
the king's
bed-
chamber

20 And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him and having made Blastus the kings chamberlain their friend, besought peace, because their countrey was nourished by the kings countrey.

21 And upon a set day, Herod arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.

22 And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a God, and not of a man.

23 And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory, and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the Ghost.

24 But the word of God grew and multiplied.

+Gr.
charge
chap. 11.
27-30.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled their ministry, and took with them John whose surname was Mark.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas chosen to go to the Gentiles.

7 Of Sergius Paulus and Elymas the forcerer.

14 Paul preaching at Antioch. 42 The Gentiles believe. 45 The Jews blaspheme.

Now there were in the church that was at Antioch certain prophets and teachers: as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and Saul.

10r. He-
rods
foster
brother.

2 As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the work wherunto I have called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid their hands on them, they sent them away.

4 So they being sent forth by the holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews:

At Salamis.

CHAP. XIII.

John: and they had also John to their minister.

6 And when they had gone thorow the isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name was Barjesus:

7 Which was with the deputy of the countrey Sergius Paulus, a prudent man: who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God.

8 But Eliphas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul (who also is called Paul) filled with the holy Ghost, set his eyes on him,

10 And said, I fall of all subtilty and all mischief, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right wayes of the Lord?

11 And now behold, the hand of the Lord is upon thee, and thou shalt be blinde, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darknesse, and he went about, seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 When the deputy when he saw what was done, beleaved, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his company looked from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and John departing from them, returned to Jerusalem.

14 But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and sat down.

15 And after the reading of the law and the prophete, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood up, and beckning with his hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers, and exalted the people * when they dwelt as
 strangers in the land of Egypt, * and with an high
 arm brought he them out of it.

Exod. 1. 1.
 Exod. 13. 14.

THE ACTS.

* Exod.

13. 16.

† Greek,

* 17. 20. 20.

perhaps

for

* 17. 20. 20.

perhaps

as a nurse

beareth,

or feed-

eth her

childe.

deut. 1. 31

1. mac. 7.

27. accord-

ing to

the Sept.

and so

Chrysost.

* Josh.

14. 1.

* Judges

3. 9.

* 1 Sam.

8. 5.

* 1 Sam.

14. 12.

* Psal.

89. 21.

* Isal.

11. 1.

* Matth.

3. 1.

* John 1.

20.

* Matth.

27. 22.

Matth.

1. 6.

18 * And about the time of forty years † suffered
he their manners in the wilderness.

19 And when he had destroyed seven nations
the land of Chanaan, * he divided their land to the
by lot.

20 And after that * he gave unto them judges
about the space of four hundred and fifty years, un-
til Samuel the prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a king, * and God
gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the
tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years.

22 And when he had removed him, * he raised
up unto them David to be their king, to whom
he gave testimony, and said, * I have found David
the son of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, who
shall fulfil all my will.

23 * Of this mans seed hath God according
his promise raised unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus.

24 * When John had first preached before
coming, the baptism of repentance to all the people
of Israel.

25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said
* Whom think ye that I am? I am not he. But
behold, there cometh one after me, whose shoes of
feet I am not worthy to loose.

26 Men and brethren, children of the stock
Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God,
to you is the word of this salvation sent.

27 For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and the
rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the words
of the prophets which are read every sabbath, that
they have fulfilled them in condemning him.

28 * And though they found no cause of death
him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was
written of him, they took him down from the tree,
and laid him in a sepulchre.

30 * But God raised him from the dead:

31 And he was seen many days of them which
came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who
are his witnesses unto the people.

32 And we declare unto you glad tidings, that

CHAP. XIII.

that the promise which was made unto the fathers,
 33 God hath fulfilled the same unto us their chil-
 dren, in that he hath raised up Jesus again, as it is
 also written in the * second psalm, Thou art my
 Son, this day have I begotten thee.

* Ps. 2.7.
 heb. 1.5.

34 And as concerning that he raised him up from
 the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he
 said on this wise, * I will give you the sure & cer-
 tainties of David.

* Isaiah
 55.3.
 † Greek.
 70. 6.

35 Wherefore he saith also in another psalm,
 Thou shalt not suffer thy holy One to see corruption.

Isa.
 55.3.

36 For David after he had served his own ge-
 neration by the will of God, * fell on sleep, and was
 laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption:

holy or
 just
 things,
 which

37 But he whom God raised again, saw no cor-
 ruption.

word the
 Sept. hath
 in the

38 ¶ Be it known unto you therefore, men and
 brethren, that through this man is preached unto
 you the forgiveness of sins.

place of
 Isa. 55.3.
 and in

39 And by him all that believe are justified from
 all things, from which ye could not be justified by
 the law of Moses.

many o-
 thers, use
 for that
 which is

40 Beware therefore, lest that come upon you,
 which is spoken of * in the prophets.

in the
 Hebrew,
 mercies.

41 Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish:
 for I work a work in your days, a work which you
 shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it un-
 to you.

* Psal.
 16.11.
 † Or,
 after he
 had in his
 own age

42 And when the Jews were gone out of the sy-
 nagogue, the Gentiles besought that these words
 might be preached to them the next sabbath.

the will
 of God.
 * 1 Kings

43 Now when the congregation was broken up,
 many of the Jews, and religious proselytes follow-
 ed Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them,
 persuaded them to continue in the grace of God.

2.10.
 * Hab. 1.5
 † Or,
 in the

44 ¶ And the next sabbath-day came almost the
 whole city together to hear the word of God.

week be-
 tween, or
 in the
 sabbath

45 But when the Jews lay the multitude, they
 were filled with envy, and spake against those things
 which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and
 blaspheming.

between.

46 Then Paul & Barnabas waxed bold and said,

¶

THE ACTS.

It was necessary that the word of God should be spoken to you: but seeing ye put it from you, and judge your selves unworthy of everlasting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

* Iſaiah
49.6.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded us saying: * I have set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldst be for salvation unto the ends of the earth.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life, believed.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

50 But the Jews stirred up the devout and noble women, and the chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts:

* Mat.
10.14.

51 * But they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came unto Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with joy, and with the holy Ghost.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted. 8 Paul healing a cripple, they are reputed gods. 19 Paul is stoned. 21 They pass thorow divers Churches, 26 and return to Antioch.

AND it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake that a great multitude both of the Jews, and also of the Greeks believed.

2 But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil-affected against the brethren.

3 Long time the Jews above they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gave testimony unto the hope of his grace, and granted signes and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided: a part held with the Jews, a part with the apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews, with their rulers, to kill them, they departed from Iconium.

C H A P. XIII.

6 They were ware of it, and fled unto Lystra, and Derbe cities of Lycaonia, and unto the regions that lieth round about.

7 And there they preached the gospel.

8 And there sat a certain man at Lystra impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mothers womb, who never had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speak: who stedfastly beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loud voice, Stand upright on thy feet: and he leaped, and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done, they lift up their voyces, saying in the speech of Lycaonia, The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men.

12 And they called Barnabas Jupiter, and Paul Mercurius, because he was the chief speaker.

13 Then the priest of Jupiter, which was before their city, brought oxen, & garlands unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the people.

14 Which when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among the people, crying out,

15 And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you, that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.

16 Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways.

17 Nevertheless, he left not himself without witness, in that he did good, and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness.

18 And notwithstanding these sayings scarce restrained they the people, that they had not done sacrifice unto them.

19 And there came thither certain Jews from Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people, and having stoned Paul, drew him out of the city, supposing he had been dead.

* Gen.

1.1.

psalm

146.5.

Revel.

14.7.

* Psalm.

81.12.

* 1 Cor.

13.35.

T H E A C T S .

20 Whereat, as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came into the city, and the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the gospel in that city, and had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Iconium, and Antioch,

22 Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that they must through much tribulation enter into the Kingdom of God.

23 And when they had ordained them elders in every church, and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the Lord, on whom they relied.

24 And after they had passed throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia,

26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, to do the work which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the door of faith unto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time with the disciples.

C H A P X V .

1 Diffension about circumcision. 6 The apostles consult about it. 12 Their determination. 16 Paul and Barnabas contend, and are separated.

A No certain men which came down from Jerusalem, taught the brethren, and said, * *Galat. 2. 14.*
 Ye ought to be circumcised after the manner of Moses, and that ye should not be laden.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had small dissension and disputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice and Samaria.

CHAP. XV.

declaring the conversion of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles, and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees, which beleaved, saying, that it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

6 And the apostles and elders came together for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose up, and said unto them, * Chap. 10. 30. & 11. 13.
Thou knowest how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel, and beleve.

8 And God which knoweth the hearts, bare them witnesse, giving them the holy Ghost, even as he did unto us.

9 * And put no difference between us and them, Chap. 10. 43.
purifying their hearts by faith.

10 Now therefore, why tempt ye God, * to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? 1 Cor. 9. 1. & Math. 23. 4.

11 But we beleve that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved even as they.

12 Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, Men & brethren, hearken unto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his Name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets, as it is written.

16 * After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down: and I will build again the ruines thereof, and I will set it up. Amos 9. 11.

THE ACTS.

17 That the residue of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles upon whom my Name is called, say the Lord, who doth all these things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that we write unto them, that they abstain from pollutions of idols, and from fornication, and from things strangled, and from blood.

21 For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath day.

22 When pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole Church, to send chosen men of their own company to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; namely, Judas, surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren.

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner. The apostles, and elders, and brethren send greeting unto the brethren, which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us, have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, Ye must be circumcised and keep the law, to whom we gave such commandment:

25 It seemed good unto us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul,

26 Men that have hazarded their lives for the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost, and unto us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things;

29 That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.

C H A P. XVI.

30 So when they were dismissed, they came to Antioch: and when they had gathered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they rejoiced for the consolation.

32 And Judas and Silas, being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them:

*2 Tim. 2: 18.
hortati.
ona*

33 And after they had tarried there a space, they were let go in peace from the brethren unto the apostles.

34 Notwithstanding it pleased Silas to abide there still.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 And some daies after, Paul said unto Barnabas, Let us go again and visit our brethren, in every city where we have preached the word of the Lord, and see how they do.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them John, whose surname was Mark.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia, and went not with them to the work.

39 And the contention was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one from the other, and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto Cyprus,

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended by the brethren unto the grace of God.

41 And he went throught Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches.

C H A P. XVI.

1 Paul circumciseth Timothy, 14 converteth Lydia, 16 casteth out a spirit of divination: 19 He and Silas are whipped and imprisoned, and delivered.

Then came he to Derbe, and Lystra, and behold, a certain Disciple was there, named Timothy, the son of a certain woman, which was a Jewesse, and ister Jew: but his father was a Greek:

1 Rom. 15: 21.

2 Which

THE ACTS.

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium.

3 Him would Paul have to go forth with him, and took, and circumcised him, because of the Jews which were in those quarters; for they knew that his father was a Greek.

• Chap.
15. 28.

4 And as they went thorow the cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep, that were ordained of the apostles and elders, which were in Jerusalem.

5 And so were the churches established in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone thorowout Bithynia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia,

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffered them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night. There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come over into Macedonia, and help us.

10 And after he had seen the vision, immediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly gathering, that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis:

• 18. the
first.

12 And from thence to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, and a colony: and we were in that city abiding certain dayes.

13 And on the sabbath we went out of the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made; and we sat down, and spake unto the women which resorted thither.

14 And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard us: whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended unto the things which were spoken of Paul.

15 And when she was baptized, and her household

CHAP: XVI.

he besought us, saying, If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my house and abide there. And he constrained us.

16 ¶ And it came to passe, as we went to prayer, a certain damsel possessed with a spirit of divination, met us, which brought her masters much gain by soothsaying. 10r. of Python

17 The same followed Paul and us, and cried, saying, These men are the servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salvation.

18 And this did she many dayes: but Paul being grieved, turned, and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out the same hour.

19 And when her masters saw that the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the market place unto the rulers.

20 And brought them to the magistrates, saying, These men being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our citie,

21 And teach customs which are not lawfull for us to receive, neither to observe, being Romans.

22 And the multitude rose up together against them, and the magistrates rent off their clothes, and commanded to beat them.

23 And when they had laid many stripes upon them, they cast them into prison, charging the keeper to keep them safely. 2 Cor. 11. 25. 1 Thess. 3. 2.

24 Who having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stocks.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang psalmes unto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were shaken, and immediately all the doores were opened, and every ones bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleep, and seeing the prison doores open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

THE ACTS.

28 But Paul cried with a loud voice, saying, I
thy self no harm, for we are all here.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and
came trembling, and fell down before Paul and
Silas,

30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what
must I do to be saved?

31 And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus
Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house.

32 And they spake unto him the word of the Lord,
and to all that were in his house.

33 And he took them the same hour of the night,
and washed their stripes, and was baptized, he and
all his straightway.

34 And when he had brought them into his house,
he set meat before them, and rejoiced, believing in
God, with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the magistrates sent the
sergeants saying, Let those men go.

36 And the keeper of the prison told this saying
to Paul, The magistrates have sent to let you go:
now therefore depart, and go in peace.

37 But Paul said unto them, They have beaten
us openly, uncondemned, being Romans, and have
cast us into prison, and now do they thrust us out
privily? nay verily, but let them come themselves,
and fetch us out.

38 And the sergeants told these words unto the
magistrates: and they feared when they heard that
they were Romans.

39 And they came and besought them, and brought
them out, and desired them to depart out of the city.

^{Chap. 16, 14.} 40 And they went out of the prison, and entered
into the house of Lydia, and when they had seen
brethren, they comforted them and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

1 Paul preacheth at Thessalonica, 10 at Berea,

15 he dispareth and preacheth at Athens.

24 Many are converted.

NOW when they had passed through Amphipolis and Appollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews.

CHAP. XVII.

2 And Paul as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath dayes reasoned with them out of the scriptures,

3 Opening and alledging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead: and that this Jesus whom I preach unto you, is Christ.

4 And some of them beleebed, and consoled with Paul and Silas: and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 But the Jews which beleebed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assailed the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jason, and certain brethren unto the rulers of the city, crying, These that have turned the world upside down, are come hither also.

7 Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying, that there is another king, one Jesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers, of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go.

10 And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither, went into the synagogue of the Jews.

11 These were more noble then those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of minde, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleebed: also of honorable women which were Greeks, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God, was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people.

14 And then immediately the brethren sent away

THE ACTS.

Paul, to go as it were to the sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him unto Athens, and receiving a commandement of Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with speed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city wholly given to idolatry.

¶ Psal. full of idols.

17 Therefore disputed he in the synagoga with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily with them that met with him,

¶ Or. base fellow.

18 Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him: and some said, What will this babler say? Others, He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods, because he preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection.

¶ Or, Mars hill it was the highest court in Athens.

19 And they took him, and brought him unto the Areopagus, saying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is?

20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears: we would know therefore what these things mean.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.)

¶ Or, court of the Areopagites.

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars hill, and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious.

¶ Or, gods that you worship.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription, TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worship, him declare I unto you.

2.4.
* Chap. 7.18.

24 * God that made the world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands:

* Psal. 136.

25 Neither is worshipped with mans hands: * though he needed any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things.

26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and

CHAP. XVIII.

hath determined the times befoze appointed, and the bounds of their habitation.

27 That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him and finde him, though he be not far from every one of us.

28 For in him we live and move, and have our being, as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also his off-spring.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the off-spring of God,* we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone graven by art, and mans device. * Isaiah 40.18.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at, but now commandeth all men every where to repent :

31 Because he hath appointed a day in the which he will judge the world in righteousness, by that man whom he hath ordained, whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead. * Rom. 10. 9. offered faith,

32 And when they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked : and others said. We will hear thee again of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them,

34 Howbeit, certain men clave unto him and followed, among the which was Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII

3 Paul laboring with his hands, and preaching at Corinth, 9 is encouraged in a vision, 12 accused before the deputy, but dismissed. 24 Of Apolles.

After these things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth, * Rom. 16.3.

2 And found a certain Jew named * Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome) and came unto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their occupation they were tent-makers)

THE ACTS:

4 And he reasoned in the synagogue every Sabbath, and persuaded the Jews, and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was Christ.

* Matth.
23. 14.

6 And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, * he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads, I am clean from henceforth: I will go unto the Gentiles.

7 ¶ And he departed thence, and entered into certain mans house, named Tulus, one that worshipped God, whose house joyned hard to the synagogue.

* 1. Co.
1. 14.

8 * And Crispus the chief ruler of the synagogue, beleeveth on the Lord with all his house: and many of the Corinthians hearing, beleeveth and were baptized.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speak, and hold thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man shall set thee to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

† Gr. Sat
there,

11 And he † continued there a year & six months, teaching the word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the judgement seat,

13 Saying, This fellow persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked wickednesse, I ye Jews, reason would that I should hear with you.

15 But if it be a question of words, and names, and of your law, look ye to it: for I will be no judge of such matters.

16 And he drave them from the judgement seat.

17 Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat him before the judgement seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

CHAP. XIX.

18 ¶ And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria, and with him Priscilla, and Aquila: having shorn his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himself entered into the synagogue, and reasoned with the Jews.

20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all means keep this feast that cometh in Jerusalem: but I will return again unto you, if God will: and he sailed from Ephesus.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone up, and saluted the church, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, he departed and went over all the country of Galatia, and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ And a certain Jew, named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephesus.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord, and being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John.

26 And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto them, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was disposed to passe into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him: who when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace.

28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, and that publicly, shewing by the scriptures, that Jesus was Christ.

CHAP. XIX.

9 The holy Ghost is given by Pauls hands.

¶ And it came to passe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus, and finding certain disciples,

1 Cor.
4.10.

Jan. 4. 15

1. 12.

THE ACTS.

2 He said unto them, Have ye received the holy Ghost since ye beleaved? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto Johns baptism.

* Matth.
3:11.

4 * Then said Paul, John verily baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should beleve on him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the synagogue, & spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing, & perswading the things concerning the kingdom of God.

9 But when divers were hardened, and beleved not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples disputing daily in the school of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two years, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Jesus, both Jewes and Greeks.

11 And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul.

12 So that from his body were brought unto the sick, handkerchiefs, or aprons, & the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certain of the vagabond Jewes, crysicks, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits, the Name of the Lord Jesus, saying, We adjure you by Jesus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were seven sons of one Sceva a Jew, and chief of the priests, which did so.

15 And the evil spirit answered and said, I know, and Paul I know, but who art thou?

16 And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leapt on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And

C H A P. XIX.

17 And this was known to all the Iewes and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus, and fear fell on them all, and the Name of the Lord Iesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleeebed came, and confessed, and shewed their deeds.

19 Many also of them which used curious artes, brought their books together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver.

20 So mightily grew the word of God, and prebales.

21 After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Ierusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministered unto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24 For a certain man named Demetrius, a silversmith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the craftsmen:

25 Whom he called together, with the workmen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth.

26 Moreover, ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perswaded and turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods which are made with hands.

27 So that not onely this our craft is in danger to be set at nought: but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia, and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole city was filled with confusion, and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia,

THE ACTS.

Macedonia, Pauls companions in trabel, they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entred in unto the people, the discip^{les} suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring him that he would not adventure himself into the theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward. And Alexander beckned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two hours, cryed out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the town-clerk had appeased the people, he said, Ye men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the citie of the Ephesians is [†] a worshipper of the great goddess Diana, and of the image which fell down from Jupiter?

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess:

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man, let the law be open, and there are deputies, let them implead one another.

39 But if ye enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a lawful assembly.

40 For we are in danger to be called in question for this dayes uproar, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse.

41 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

C H A P. XX.

1 Paul goeth to Macedonia. 7 He celebrateth the

† Or. the temple keeper.

Or. the court dayes are kept.
Or. ordinary.

C H A P. XX.

the Lords supper, and preacheth. 9 Eutychus fallen down dead, is rais'd to life, 17 and 18 at Miletus he committeth the flock to the elders, 16 and departeth.

AND after the uproar was ceased, Paul called unto him the disciples, and embraced them, and departed for to go into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone over those parts, and had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece.

3 And there abode three moneths: and when the Jews saw that they could not wait for him, as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to return through Macedonia.

4 And there accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea: and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus: and of Asia, Tychicus and Trophimus.

5 These going before, tarried for us at Troas:

6 And he sailed away from Philippi, after the days of unleavened bread, and came unto them to Troas in five days, where we abode seven days.

7 And upon the first day of the week, when the disciples came together to break bread, Paul preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech until midnight.

8 And there were many lights in the upper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sat in a window a certain young man, named Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep, and as Paul was long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from the third loft, and was taken up dead.

10 And Paul went down, and fell on him, and embracing him, said, Trouble not your selfe, for his life is in him.

11 When he therefore was come up again, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even till break of day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

13 And we went before to ship, and sailed unto

Aleg,

THE ACTS.

Atlos, there intending to take in Paul : for so he
he appointed, minding himself to go afoot.

14 And when he met with us at Atlos, we took
him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day
over against Chios, and the next day we arrived
at Samos, and tarried at Trogyllum : and the next
day we came to Miletus.

16 For Paul had determined to sail by Epho-
sus, because he would not spend the time in Asia :
for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Je-
rusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus,
and called the elders of the church.

18 And when they were come to him, he said un-
to them, Ye know from the first day that I came
into Asia, after what manner I have been with you
at all seasons,

19 Serving the Lord with all humillity of mind,
and with many tears and temptations, which befall
me by the lying in wait of the Jews :

20 And how I kept back nothing that was pro-
fitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have
taught you publickly, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Jews, and also to the
Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward
our Lord Jesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I go bound in the spirit un-
to Jerusalem, not knowing the things that shall
befall me there ;

23 Save that the holy Ghost witnesseth in every
city, saying, that bonds and afflictions shall abide me.

24 But none of these things move me, neither
count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might
finish my course with joy, and the ministry which
I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the
 Gospel of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that ye all among
whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God,
shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that
I am pure from the blood of all men.

¶ Or,
wait for
me.

C H A P. XXI.

27 For I have not shunned to declare unto you all the counsel of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore unto your selves, and to all the flock, over the which the holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

30 Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three years I ceased not to warn every one night and day with tears.

32 And now brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are sanctified.

33 I have coveted no mans silver, or gold, or apparel.

34 Yea, you your selves know, * that these hands have ministered into my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I have shewed you all things, how that so laboring, ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jesus, how he said, It is more blessed to give then to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls neck, and kissed him.

38 Soztowing most of all for the words which he spake, that they should see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ship.

C H A P. XXI.

Paul will not be dissuaded from going to Jerusalem. 9 Philips daughters prophetesses, 27 Paul at Jerusalem is apprehended, and in great danger, 31 but rescued by the chief captain.

AND it came to passe, that after we were gotten from them, and had lanchted, we came with a straight

* Cor.
4:12.
1 Thess.
2:9.
2 Thess.
3:8.

THE ACTS.

Straight course unto Choos, and the day following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sailing over unto Phœcia, we went aboard, and set forth.

3 Now when we had discovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed unto Syria, and landed at Tyre: for there the ship was to unlade her burden.

4 And finding disciples, we tarried there several days: who said to Paul through the Spirit that he should not go up to Jerusalem.

5 And when we had accomplished those days, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of the city: and we kneeled down on the shore and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we took ship, and they returned home again.

7 And when we had finished our course from Tyre we came to Ptolemais, and saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

ⁱ Chap.
6.5.

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls company, departed, and came unto Cesarea, and were lodged in the house of Phillip the evangelist (ⁱ which was one of the seven) and abode with him.

9 And the same man had four daughters, virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as we tarried there many days, there came down from Judea a certain Prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come unto us, he took Pauls girdle, and bound his own hands and feet, and said, Thus saith the holy Ghost. So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard these things, both we and they of that place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What mean ye now, and to break mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound once, but also to die at Jerusalem for the Name of the Lord Jesus.

CHAP. XXI.

14 And when he would not be persuaded, we
tried, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes we took up our carri-
ages, and went up to Jerusalem.

16 There went with us also certain of the disci-
ples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Hana-
sa of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should
lodge.

17 And when we were come to Jerusalem, the
brethren received us gladly.

18 And the day following Paul went in with
us unto James, and all the elders were present.

19 And when he had saluted them, he declared
particularly, what things God had wrought among
the Gentiles by his ministry.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the
Lord, and said unto him, Thou seest, brother, how
many thousands of Jews there are which be-
leeve, and they are all zealous of the law.

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest
all the Jews which are among the Gentiles, to for-
sake Moses, saying, that they ought not to circum-
cise their children, neither to walk after the customs

22 What is it therefore? the multitude must
needs come together: for they will hear that thou
art come.

23 Do therefore this that we say to thee: We
have four men which have a vow on them.

24 Them take and purifie thy self with them,
and be at charges with them, that they may ^{* Num;} have
their heads: and all may know that those things ^{6. 18.}
whereof they were informed concerning thee, are ^{Chap.}
nothing, but that thou thy self also walkest orderly, ^{18. 5.}
and keepest the law.

25 As touching the Gentiles which beleeve,
^{* Chap.} we have written and concluded that they observe ^{15. 20.}
no such thing, save only that they keep themselves
from things offered to idols, and from blood, and
from strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day
purifying himself with them, entered into the tem-
ple, ^{* Num;} to signify the accomplishment of the dayes of ^{6. 18.}
purifica-

THE ACTS.

purification, until that an offering should be offered for ever⁷ one of them.

27 And when the seven dayes were almost ended the Jews which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, help : this is the man that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had seen before with him in the city Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed the Paul had brought into the temple.)

30 And all the city was moved, and the people ran together : and they took Paul and drew him out of the temple : and forthwith the doores were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that at Jerusalem was in an uproar.

32 Who immediately took souldiers, and brethren, and ran down unto them : and when they saw the chief captain and the souldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near, & took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains, and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And some cried one thing, some another, among the multitude : and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle.

35 And when he came upon the stairs, so it was, that he was born of the souldiers for the violence to the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain, May I speak unto thee ? who said, Canst thou speak Greek ?

38 * Art not thou that Egyptian, which before these dayes made an uproar, and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers

CHAP. XXII.

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a Jew of Tarsus, a city in Cilicia. a citizen of no mean city: and I beseech thee, suffer me to speak unto the people.

40 And when he had given him licence, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckned with the hand unto the people: and when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

CHAP. XXII.

1 Paul declareth how he was converted, 17 and called to the apostleship. 22 Mentioning the Gentiles, the people exclaim on him. 25 He escapeth scourging by the priviledge of a Roman

MEN, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence, which I make now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence: and he saith,)

3 * I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the Fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day. * Chap. 21. 39.

4 * And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women. * Chap. 21. 3.

5 As also the high priest doth bear me witnesse, and all the elders: from whom also I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them which were there, bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damascus, about noon, suddenly there shone from heaven a great light round about me.

7 And I fell vnto the ground, and heard a voice saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 And I answered, Who art thou, Lord? And he saith vnto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 And

THE ACTS.

9 And they that were with me saw indeed light, and were afraid: but they heard not the voice of him that spake to me.

10 And I said, what shall I do, Lord? And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of the light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus:

12 And one Ananias a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt there,

13 Came unto me, and stood, and said unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I looked up upon him.

14 And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance,

18 And saw him saying unto me, Wake hast, and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord, they know that I impsoned and beat in every synagogue them that believed on thee.

* Chap.
7.58.

20 * And when the blood of thy Martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and consenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that slew him.

21 And he said unto me, Depart, for I will send thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and then lift up their voices, and said, Away with him

CHAP. XXIII.

such a fellow from the earth : for it is not fit that he should live.

23 And as they cried out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the air,

24 The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the castle, and bad that he should be examined by scourging : that he might know wherefore they cried so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the centurion that stood by, Is it lawful for you to scourge a man that is a Roman, and uncondemned ?

26 When the centurion heard that, he went and told the chief captain, saying, Take heed what thou doest, for this man is a Roman.

27 Then the chief captain came, and said unto him, Tell me, Art thou a Roman ? He said, Yea.

28 And the chief captain answered, With a great sum obtained I this freedom. And Paul said, But I was free born.

29 Then straightway they departed from him which should have examined him : and the chief captain also was afraid, after that he knew that he was a Roman, and because he had bound him.

30 On the morrow, because he would have known the certainty wherefore he was accused of the Jews, he loosed him from his bands, and commanded the chief priests and all their council to appear, and brought Paul down, and set him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 As Paul pleaded his cause, Ananias commandeth to smite him. 7 Dissension among his accusers. 11 God encourageth him. 15 The Jews lay wait for him. 20 He is rescued by the chief captain, and sent to Felix.

AND Paul earnestly beholding the council, said, Men and brethren, I have lived in all good conscience before God until this day.

2 And the high priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then said Paul unto him, God shall smite thee, thou whited wall : for thou art set to judge after

THE ACTS.

after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the law?

4 And they that stood by, said, Revilest thou Gods high priest?

* Exod.
22.17.

5 Then said Paul, I will not, brethren, that he was the high priest: for it is written, * Thou shalt not speak evil of the ruler of thy people.

* Phil.
3.5.
Chap.
24.11.

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadduces, and the other Pharisees, he cryed out in the council, Men and brethren, * I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: * of the hope and resurrection of the dead I am called in question,

7 And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadduces: and the multitude was divided.

* Matth.
22.23.

8 * For the Sadduces say that there is no resurrection, neither angel nor spirit: but the Pharisees confesse both.

9 And there arose a great cry: and the scribes that were on the Pharisees part, arose, and stood, saying, We finde no evil in this man: but if a spirit, or an angel hath spoken to him, let us not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissension, the chief captain, fearing lest Paul should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the soldiers to go down and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord stood by him, and said, Be of good cheer, Paul: for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome.

99r. with
an oath.
of ex-
ecration.

12 And when it was day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying, that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then forty which had made this conspiracy.

14 And they came to the chief priests and elders, and said, We have bound our selves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing until we have slain Paul.

C H A P. XXIIII.

15 Now therefore ye with the counsell, signifie to the chief captain that he bring him down unto you to morrow, as though ye would enquire something more perfectly concerning him: and we, or other he come next, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sisters son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entred into the castle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said, Bring this young man unto the chief captain: for he hath a certain thing to tell him.

18 So he took him, and brought him to the chief captain, and said, Paul the prisoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who hath something to say unto thee.

19 Then the chief captain took him by the hand, and went with him aside privately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me?

20 And he said, The Jews have agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring down Paul to morrow into the counsel, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But do not thou yeeld unto them: for there lie in wait for him of them more then fourty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him: and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chief captain then let the young man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers to go to Cesarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night:

24 And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe unto Felix the governor.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner:

26 Claudius Lysias unto the most excellent governor Felix, sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them, then came I with an army,

THE ACTS.

arup, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Roman.

28 And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth to their counsell:

29 Whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me how that the Jews wait for the man, I sent straightway to them, and gave commandment to his accusers also, to be before thee, what they had against him. Farewel.

31 Then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought him by night to Asipatris.

32 On the morrow they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the castle.

33 Who when they came to Cesarea, and delivered the epistle to the governour, presented Paul also before him.

34 And when the governour had read the letter, he asked of what province he was. And when he understood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will hear thee, said he, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herods judgement hall.

CHAP. XXIII.

1 Paul accused by Tertullus, 11 answereth for himself, 24 preacheth Christ to the governour and his wife. 27 He going out of his office, leaveth Paul prisoner.

AND after five dayes Ananias the high priest ascended with the elders, and with a certain orator named Tertullus, who informed the governour against Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse him, saying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietnesse, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence:

3 We accept it alwayes, and in all places, with noble Felix, with all thankfulness.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not further troubled

CHAP. XXIII.

unto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest hear us of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we have found this man a pestilent fellow, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ring-leader of the sect of the Nazarenes.

6 Who also hath gone about to profane the temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.

7 But the chief captain Lyllias came upon us, and with great violence took him away out of our hands.

8 Commanding his accusers to come unto thee, by examining of whom thy self mayest take knowledge of all these things whereof we accuse him.

9 And the Jews also assented, saying that these things were so.

10 Then Paul, after that the governour had beckned unto him to speak, answered; Forasmuch as I know that thou hast been of many years a judge unto this nation, I do the more cheerfully answer for my self;

11 Because that thou mayest understand, that there are yet but twelve dayes since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship.

12 And they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people neither in the synagogues, nor in the city:

13 Neither can they prove the things whereof they now accuse me.

14 But this I confesse unto thee, that after the way which they call heresse, so worship I the God of my fathers, believng all things which are written in the law and the prophets.

15 And have hope towards God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust.

16 And herein do I exercise my self, to have alwayes a conscience void of offence toward God, and toward man.

17 Now after many yeers, I came to bring alms to my nation, and offerings:

THE ACTS.

* Chap.
21. 27.

18 * Whereupon certain Jews from Asia came
me persued in the temple, neither with multitude,
nor with tumult:

19 Who ought to have been here before thee, an
object, if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they have
found any evil doing in me, while I stood before
the counsell:

* Chap.
23. 6.

21 Except it be for this one voice, that I cry
standing among them, * Touching the resurrection
of the dead I am called in question by you this day.

22 And when Felix heard these things, having
more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred
them, and said, When Lysias the chief captain
shall come down, I will know the uttermost of your
matter.

23 And he commanded a centurion to keep Paul,
and to let him have liberty, and that he should for-
bid none of his acquaintance to minister or come
unto him.

24 And after certain dayes, when Felix came
with his wife Drusilla, which was a Jewe, he sent
for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in
Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousness, temper-
ance, and judgement to come, Felix trembled, and
answered, So thy way for this time, when I have
convenient season I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money should have been
given him of Paul, that he might loose him: wherefore
he sent for him the oftner, and communed with him.

27 But after two yeeres, Porcius Festus came
into Felix room: and Felix willing to shew his
Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

1 Paul accused before Festus, 8 answereth for
himself, 11 appealeth to Cesar. 14 Festus open-
eth his matter to Agrippa. 25 He is brought
forth, and cleared by Festus.

NOW when Festus was come into the pa-
vince, after thre dayes he ascended from Ce-
sarea to Jerusalem.

CHAP. XXV.

2 Then the high priest and the chief of the Jews, informed him against Paul, and besought him,

3 And desired favour against him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem, laying wait in the way to kill him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart shortly thither.

5 Let them therefore said he which among you are able, go down with me, and accuse this man, if there be any wickedness in him.

6 And when he had tarried among them || more
then ten dayes, he went down unto Cesarea, and the
next day sitting in the judgement seat, commanded
Paul to be brought :

10v. 26
some co-
pies read,
No more
then 8 or
10 dayes.

7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem, stood round about. and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul, which they could not prove.

8 While he answered for himself, Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the temple, nor yet against Cesar, have I offended any thing at all.

9 But Festus willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered Paul, and said, wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cessars judgement seat, where I ought to be judged; to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die, but if there be none of these things, whereof these accuse me, no man may deliver me into them: I appeal unto Cesar.

12 Then Festus, when he had conferred with the council, answered, Hast thou appealed unto Cesar? unto Cesar shalt thou go.

13 And after certain dayes, king Agrippa and Bernice, came unto Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had been there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix.

THE ACTS.

15 About whom when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests, and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have judgement against him.

16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accused, have the accusers face to face, and have licence to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sat on the judgement seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed:

19 But had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

46r.
I was
doubtful
how to
enquire
herof.
¶ Or,
judge-
ment.

20 And because I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked him whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be referred unto the hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I might send him to Cæsar.

22 Then Agrippa said unto Festus, I would also hear the man my self. To morrow, said he, thou shalt hear him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entered into the place of hearing, with the chief captains, and principal men of the citie; at Festus commandment Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with us, we see this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem and also here, crying that he ought not to live any longer.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him.

26 Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord: wherefore I have brought him

CHAP. XXVI.

forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might have somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not to shew to signify the crimes laid against him.

CHAP. XXVI

1 Paul before Agrippa declareth his life: 12 His conversion and calling: 24 Festus chargeth him to be mad. 28 Agrippa almost perswaded to be a Christian.

Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Thou art permitted to speak for thy self. Then Paul stablished forth the matter, and answered for himself.

2 I think my self happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for my self this day before thee touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews:

3 Especially because I know thee to be expert in all customs and questions which are among the Jews: wherefore I beseech thee to hear me patiently.

4 My manner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews,

5 Which knew me from the beginning, (if they would testify) that after the most strictest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee.

6 And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God unto our fathers:

7 Unto which promise our twelve tribes incessantly serving God day and night, hope to come: for which hopes sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.

8 Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God should raise the dead?

9 I verily thought with my self, that I ought to do many things contrary to the Name of Jesus of Nazareth:

10 * Which thing I also did in Jerusalem, * Chap. 23.
as many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received authority from the chief priests,

THE ACTS.

and when they were put to death, I gave my voice against them.

11 And I punished them oft in every synagogue, and compelled them to blaspheme, and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even unto strange cities.

^{9.} Chap. 12 * Whereupon, as I went to Damascus with authority and commission from the chief priests:

13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven, above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me, and them which journeyed with me.

14 And when we were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.

15 And I said, Who art thou, Lord? And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest.

16 But rise, and stand upon thy feet, for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee minister and a witness, both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee.

17 Delibering thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, unto whom now I send thee.

18 To open their eyes, and to turn them from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and inheritance among them which are sanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not disobedient to the heavenly vision:

20 But shewed first unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Judea, and then to the Gentiles, that they should repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For these causes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill me.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to small and great, saying none other things then those which

CHAP. XXVI.

the prophets and Moles did say should come :

23 That Christ should suffer, and that he should be the first that should rise from the dead, and should shew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as he thus spake for himself, Festus said with a loud voice, Paul, thou art beside thy self, much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he said, I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speak forth the words of truth and sobernelle.

26 For the king knoweth of these things, before whom also I speak freely : for I am perswaded, that none of these things are hidden from him, for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleevest thou the prophets? I know that thou beleevest.

28 Then Agrippa said unto Paul, Almost thou perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God that not onely thou, but also all that hear me this day, were both almost, & altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when he had thus spoken, the king rose up, and the governour, and Bernice, and they that late with them.

31 And when they were gone aslee, they talked between themselves, saying, This man doth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa unto Festus, This man might have been set at liberty, if he had not appealed unto Cesar.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 Paul shipping toward Rome, so foretelleth the danger of the voyage, 11 but is not beleaved.

14 They are tossed with a tempest, 41 and suffer shipwrack, 22, 34, 44. yet all come safe to land.

AND when it was determined, that we should sail into Italy, they delivered Paul, and certain other prisoners, unto one named Julius, a centurion of Augustus band.

2 And entering into a ship of Adramyttum, we lanched, meaning to sail by the coasts of Asia, one Aristarchus a Macedonian of Thessalonica, being with us.

THE ACTS.

3 And the next day we touched at Sidon: and Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave him liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself.

4 And when we had lanchen from thence, we sailed under Cyprus, because the winde was contrary.

5 And when we had sailed over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, a city of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ship of Alexandria, sailing into Italy, and he put us therein.

7 And when we had sailed slowly many days, and scarce were come over against Cnidus, the winde not suffering us, we sailed under Crete over against Salmone,

92.
Candy.

8 And hardly passing it, came unto a place which is called the Fair havens, nigh whereunto was the city of Lasea.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

10 And said unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ship, but also of our lives.

92.
in-
jury.

11 Nevertheless, the centurion believed the master and the owner of the ship, more then the things which were spoken by Paul:

12 And because the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to Phenice and there to winter, which is an haven of Crete and lieth toward the south-west, and north-west.

13 And when the south-winde blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence, they sailed close by Crete.

14 But not long after, there arose against it a tempestuous winde, called Euroclydon.

92.
beat.

15 And when the ship was caught, and could not bear up into the winde, we let her drive.

16 And running under a certain island, which is called Claudia, we had much work to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken up, they were

C H A P. XXVII.

helps, undergirding the ship; and fearing lest they should fall into the quick-sands, strake sail, and so were driven.

18 And being exceedingly tossed with a tempest, the next day they lightened the ship.

19 And the third day we cast out with our own hands the tackling of the ship.

20 And when neither sun nor stars in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay on us, all hope that we should be saved was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said, Sirs, ye should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and losse.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there shall be no losse of any mans life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serve,

24 Saying, Fear not, Paul, thou must be brought before Cæsar, and so, God hath given thee all them that sail with thee.

25 Wherefore, Sirs, be of good cheer: for I perceive God, that it shall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit, we must be cast upon a certain island.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria, about midnight the shipmen deemed that they drew neerer to some country:

28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they sounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let down the boat into the sea, under colour as though they would have cast anchors out of the fore-ship,

31 Paul said to the Centurion and to the soldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

THE ACTS.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul besought them all to take meat, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried, and continued fasting, having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore, I pray you to take some meat, for this is for your health, for there shall not on hair fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in presence of them all; and when he had broken it, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they also took some meat.

37 And we were in all in the ship, two hundred threescore and sixteen souls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lighted the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land: but they discovered a certain creek, with a shoar, into the which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the ship.

Gr. cut
the an-
chors, they
left them
in the
sea, &c.

40 And when they had taken up the anchors, they committed themselves unto the sea, and loosed the rudder bands, and hoised up the main sail to the wind, and made toward shoar.

41 And falling into a place where two seas met, they ran the ship aground, and the forepart stuck fast, and remained immovable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the souldiers counsel was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out, and escape.

43 But the centurion willing to save Paul, kept them from their purpose, and commanded that they which could swim, should cast themselves first into the sea, and get to land:

44 And the rest, some on boards, and some on broken pieces of the ship: and so it came to passe, that they escaped all safe to land.

CHAP. XXVII.

1 The Barbarians kindnesse to Paul. 5 The viper on

CHAP. XXVIII.

on his hand. 11 They depart toward Rome:
17 He declareth the cause of his coming. 24
Some beleeve his preaching, and some do not:
yet he preacheth there two years.

AND when they were escaped, then they knew
that the island was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people shewed us no little
kindnesse: for they kindled a fire, and received us
every one, because of the present rain, and because of
the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of
sticks, and laid them on the fire, there came a viper
out of the heat, and fastened on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians saw the venemous
beast hang on his hand, they said among them-
selves, No doubt this man is a murderer, whom
though he hath escaped the sea, yet vengeance suf-
fereth not to live.

5 And he shook of the beast into the fire, and felt
no harm.

6 Howbeit they looked when he should have swollen,
or fallen down dead suddenly: but after they had
looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him,
they changed their mindes, and said that he was a
god.

7 In the same quarters were possessions of the
chief man of the island, whose name was Publius,
who received us, & lodged us three dayes courteously.

8 And it came to passe that the father of Pub-
lius lay sick of a fever, and of a bloody flux, to whom
Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid his hands on
him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which
had diseases in the island came, and were healed:

10 Who also honoured us with many honours,
and when we departed, they laded us with such
things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a
ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle,
whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we tarried there
three dayes.

THE ACTS.

13 And from thence we set a compass, and came to Rhegium, and after one day the south winde blew, and we came the next day to Путеoli :

14 Where we found brethren, and we desired to tarry with them seven dayes : and so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii forum, and the three taberns : whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the Centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard : but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a souldier that kept him.

17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes Paul called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them, Men and brethren, though I have committed nothing against the people or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans.

18 Who when they had examined me, would have let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the Jews spake against it, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar, not that I had ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore have I called for you to see you, and to speak with you : because that in the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain.

21 And they said unto him, We neither receive letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came, shewen or spake any harm of thee.

22 But we desire to hear of thee what thou thinkest : for as concerning this sect, we know that everywhere it is spoken against.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, they came many to him into his lodging, to whom he recounted and testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and out of the prophets, from morning till evening.

CHAP. I.

24 And some beleebed the things which were spoken, and some beleebed not.

25 And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word. Well spake the holy Ghost by Elaias the prophet unto our fathers,

26 Saying, * Go unto this people, and say, * Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand, and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed grosse, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes, have they closed, lest they should see with their eyes, and hear with thier ears, and understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

28 Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it.

29 And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

30 And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that came in unto him,

31 Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

¶ The end of the acts of the apostles.

¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE apostle to the ROMANS. CHAP. I.

1 Pauls calling: 9 his desire to come to them: 16 What his gospel is. 18 Gods anger against all sin. 21 The Gentiles sins.

Paul a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, * separated unto the gospel of God,

2 (Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures.)

3 Concerning

* Isa. 67.
March.
12. 14.
Mark 4.
12.
Luk 8. 4.
John 12.
40.
Rom. 11.
8.

* Act.
13. 1.

TO THE ROMANES.

3 Concerning his Son Iesus Christ our Lord, who was made of the seed of Dabid according to the flesh:

4 Or. de-
termi-
ned.

4 And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holinesse, by the resurrection from the dead,

5 Or. so
the obe-
dience
of faith.

5 By whom we have receiued grace and apostleship, & for obedience to the faith among all nations for his Name,

6 Among whom are ye also the called of Iesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: grace be to you and peace from God our father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Iesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.

9 Or.
in my
spirit.

9 For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you alwayes in my prayers,

10 Making request (if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God) to come unto you.

11 For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spirituall gift, to the end you may be established,

12 Or.
in you.

12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you, by the mutuall faith both of you and me.

13 Or. in
you.

13 Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you (but was let hitherto) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles.

14 I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians, both to the wise, and to the unwise.

15 So, as much as in me is. I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.

16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation, to every one that beleeueth. to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.

C H A P. I.

17 For therein is the righteousnesse of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, * The ^{Hab. 2.4.} just shall live by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodlinesse, and unrighteousnesse of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousnesse.

19 Because that which may be known of God, is manifest in them, for God hath shewed it unto ^{10. 10} them.

20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world, are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead, || so that they are without excuse. ^{10. 10}

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened: ^{10. 10}

22 Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools:

23 And changed the glory of the incorruptible * God, into an image made like to corruptible man, * ^{10. 10} and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things:

24 Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleannes, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves:

25 Altho changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more then the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.

26 For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature:

27 And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the women, burned in their lust one towards another, men with men working that which is unseemly: and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet. ^{10. 10}

28 And even as they did not like || to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to || a reprobate minde, to do those things which are not convenient;

29 Being

TO THE ROMANS.

29 Being filled with all unrighteousnesse, fornication, wickednesse, covetousnesse, maliciousnesse, full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity, whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, indenters of evil things, disobedient to parents.

31 Without understanding, covenant-breakers, *Or, unsociable.* without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful.

32 Who knowing the judgement of God (that they which commit such things, are worthy of death) not onely do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them. *Or, content with them.*

CHAP. II.

1 They that condemn sin in others, and yet sin, are inexcusable, whether they be Jews or Gentiles.

Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thy self, for thou that judgest, doest the same things.

2 But we are sure that the judgement of God is according to truth, against them which commit such things:

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgement of God?

4 O, despisest thou the riches of his goodness, and forbearance, and long-suffering, not knowing that his goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardness, and impenitent heart, ** James 5. 3.* treasurest up unto thy self wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgement of God:

6 ** Psa. 62. 12. Math. 16. 27. Revel. 20. 12.* Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

7 To them, who by patient continuance in well-doing, seek for glory, and honor, and immortality, eternal life:

8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousnesse; indignation and wrath,

9 Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man

C H A P. II.

man that doth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the ^{Gr.} Gentile. Greek.

10 But glory, honour, and peace to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the ^{Gr.} Gentile. Greek.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God:

12 For as many as have sinned without law, shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law.

13 For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

14 For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law: these having not the law, are a law unto themselves,

15 Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their || conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts || the mean while accusing, or else excusing one another:

16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel.

17 Behold thou art called a Jew, and reatest in the law, and makest thy boast of God:

18 And knowest his will, and || approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law,

19 And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness:

20 An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes: which hast the form of knowledge, and of the truth in the law;

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preacheest, a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

22 Thou that sayest, A man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that abhorrest idols, dost thou commit sacrifice?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourst thou God?

24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among the Gentiles, through you, as it is * written:

25 For

^{Gr.} the
consci-
ence wit-
nessing
with
them.
^{Gr.} be-
tween
them-
selves.
^{Gr.} try-
est the
things
that
differ.

* Isaiah
52. 5.
Ezek. 36
20, 23.

TO THE ROMANES.

25 For circumcision verily profiteth if thou keep the law: but if thou be a breaker of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision:

26 Therefore if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfill the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgresse the law?

28 For he is not a Jew which is one outwardly, neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh:

29 But he is a Jew which is one inwardly, and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

C H A P. III.

1 The Jews prerogative. 9 Yet the law convinceth them also of sin. 20 None justified by the law, but by faith,

What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision?

2 Much every way: chiefly because that unto them were committed the oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not beleve? shall their unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every man a liar, as it is written, * That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou art judged.

* psal.
51.4.

5 But if our unrighteousness commend the righteousness of God, what shall we say? is God unrighteous who taketh vengeance? (I speak as a man.)

6 God forbid: for then how shall God judge the world?

7 For if the truth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner?

8 And not rather as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say, Let us do evil, that good may come: whose damnation is just.

9 What then? are we better then they? No, in charge, no wise: for we have before † proved both Jews and

† Gr.

CHAP. III.

and Gentiles, that they are all under sin.

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one.

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doth good, no not one.

13 Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they have used deceit, the poison of asps is under their lips.

14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness

15 Their feet are swift to shed blood.

16 Destruction and misery are in their wayes:

17 And the way of peace have they not known.

18 There is no fear of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

20 Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

1 Cor. 7
subjected to
the judg-
ment of
God.

21 But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law, and the prophets.

22 Even the righteousness of God, which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all, and upon all them that beleve: for there is no difference:

23 For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God,

24 Being justified freely by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ:

25 Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God.

1 Cor. 7
fore-or-
dained,
1 Cor. 13
passing
over.

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness: that he might be just, and the justifier of him which beleeveth in Jesus.

27 Where is boasting then? it is excluded. By what law? of works: nay, but by the law of faith.

28 There.

TO THE ROMANS.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

29 Is he the God of the Jews onely? is he not also of the Gentiles? Yea, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing it is one God which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith.

31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.

CHAP. IIIL.

1 Abrahams faith imputed for righteousness, 10 before he was circumcised. 15 Abraham the father of all believers. 24 Our faith shall be also imputed.

WHat shall we say then, that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found?

2 For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory, but not before God.

3 For what saith the scripture? Abraham believeth God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness.

4 Now to him that worketh, is the reward reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly; his faith is counted for righteousness.

6 Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works;

7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.

8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin.

9 Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision onely, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision.

11 And he received the signe of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith, which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the fa-

CHAP. IIII.

ther of all them that beleue, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also:

12 And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the father of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed through the law, but through the righteousness of faith,

14 For if they which are of the law be heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect.

15 Because the law worketh wrath: for where no law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therefore it is of faith, that it might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all.

17 (As it is written, * I have made thee a father of many nations) before him whom he beleue-
* Gen. 17. 8.
I will be
unto him

18 Who against hope beleue in hope, that he might become the father of many nations: according to that which was spoken, * So shall thy seed be.

19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred yeer old, neither yet the deadness of Saras womb.

20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief: but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;

21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him:

24 But for us also to whom it shall be imputed, if we beleue on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead,

TO THE ROMANS.

32 Who was delivered for our offences, and has raised again for our justification.

CHAP. V.

1 Being justified by faith, we have peace with God, 12 sin and death came by Adam, 17 righteousness: and life by Christ.

Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

2 By whom also we have access by faith, into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

3 And not onely so, but we glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation worketh patience:

4 And patience, experience: and experience begeth

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost which is given unto us.

for, according to the time,

6 For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die, yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.

8 But God commendeth his love towards us, in that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us.

9 Much more then being now justified by his blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son: much more being reconciled, we shall be saved by his life.

11 And not onely so, but we also joy in God, through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now received the atonement.

in whom.

12 Therefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and reach by sin: and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned.

13 For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.

15 But not as the offence, so also is the free gift:

CHAP. VI.

for if through the offence of one, many be dead : much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace which is by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.

16 And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift : for the judgement was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.

17 For if ^{¶ Or, by one offence} by one mans offence death reigned by one, much more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift of righteousness, shall reign in life by one, Iesus Christ.

18 Therefore as ^{¶ Or, by one offence} by the offence of one, judgement came upon all men to condemnation : even so ^{¶ Or, by one righteously} by the righteousness of one, the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners : so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous.

20 Wherefore, the law entered, that the offence might abound : but where sin abounded, grace tin much more abound.

21 That as sin hath reigned unto death ; even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life, by Iesus Christ our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

1 We may not live in sin : 12 Nor let sin reign in us. 23 Death is the wages of sin.

What shall we say then ? shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound ?

2 God forbid. How shall we that are dead to sin, live any longer therein ?

3 Know ye not, that so many of us, as ^{¶ Or, are} were baptized into Iesus Christ, were baptized into his death ?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death, that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father : even we also should walk in newnesse of life.

5 For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death : we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection :

6 Knowing

TO THE ROMANES.

6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serue sin.

† Gr. i. a. s. d.

7 For he that is dead, is † freed from sin.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we beleue that we shall also liue with him :

9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no moze, death hath no moze dominion over him.

10 For in that he died, he died unto sin once, but in that he liueth, he liueth unto God.

11 Likewise reckon ye also your selues to be dead indeed unto sin : but alide unto God through Iesus Christ our Lord,

12 Let not sin reigne therefore in your mortall body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof.

† Gr.

arms, or weapons

13 Neither yield ye your members as † instruments of unrighteousnesse unto sin : but yield your selues unto God, as those that are alide from the dead, and your members as instruments of righteousness unto God.

14 For sin shall not have dominion over you, for ye are not under the law, but under grace.

15 What then ? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace ? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yield your selues servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey : whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness ?

17 But God be thanked that ye were the servants of sin : but ye have obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine, † which was delivered to you.

† Gr.

where to ye were delivered.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the servants of righteousness.

19 I speak after the manner of men, because of the infirmity of your flesh : for as ye have yielded your members servants to uncleannesse, and to iniquity unto iniquity : even so now yield your members servants to righteousness unto holinesse.

20 For when ye were the servants of sin, ye were free † from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things, whereby

† Gr. to righteousness.

C H A P. VII.

whereof ye are now ashamed: for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

23 For the wages of sin is death: but the gift of God is eternal life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

C H A P. VII.

1 No law hath power over a man longer then he liveth. 7 The law is not sin, 12 but holy, just, and good.

K Now ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the law to her husband, so long as he liveth: but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of the husband.

3 So then, if while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteresse: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law, so that she is no adulteresse, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law, by the body of Christ, that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins which were by the law, did work in our members, to bring forth fruit unto death.

6 But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held, that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? is the law sin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the law; for I had not known lust, except the law had said, Thou shalt not covet.

8 But sin taking occasion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence.

† Gr. passions.

|| Or. being dead to that.

|| Or. concupiscence.

TO THE ROMANES.

For without the law sin was dead.

9 For I was alive without the law once, but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died.

10 And the commandment which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death.

11 For sin taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the law is holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good.

13 Was that then which is good, made dearh unto me? God forbid. But sin that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good: that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinfull.

14 For we know that the law is spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.

15 For that which I do, I ^{know} allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.

16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent into the law, that it is good.

17 Now then it is no more I that do it: but sin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know, that in me (that is in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing. For to will is present with me: but how to perform that which is good, I finde not.

19 For the good that I would, I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.

21 I finde then a law, that when I would do good, evil is present with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man.

23 But I see another law in my members, working against the law of my minde, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am: who shall deliver me from ^{this} the body of this death?

25 I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord

For this
body of
death

CHAP. VIII.

So then, with the minde I my self serue the law of God: but with the flesh, the law of sin.

CHAP. VIII.

1 Who are free from condemnation. 5. 13 What harm cometh of the flesh: 6. 14 and what good of the spirit: 17 and what of being Gods childe

There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Iesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit.

2 For the law of the spirit of life in Christ Iesus, hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin condemn-
ed sin in the flesh:

*Or, by
sacrifice
for sin.*

4 That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, do minde the things of the flesh: but they that are after the spirit, the things of the spirit.

6 For to be carnally minded, is death: but to be spiritually minded, is life and peace:

*Or, the
minding
of the
flesh.*

7 Because the carnal minde is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

*Or, the
minding
of the
spirit.*

8 So then they that are in the flesh, cannot please God.

*Or, the
minding
of the
flesh.*

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead, because of sin: but the spirit is life, because of righteousness.

11 But if the spirit of him that raised up Iesus from the dead, dwell in you: he that raised up Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortal bodies by his spirit that dwelleth in you.

*Or,
because
of his
spirit.*

12 Therefore, brethren, we are debtours, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if

TO THE ROMANES.

ye through the Spirit do mortifie the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.

15 For ye have not received the Spirit of bondage again to fear: but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The Spirit it self, beareth witness with our Spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heirs, heirs of God, and joynt heirs with Christ: if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in us.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God.

20 For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subjected the same in hope:

21 Because the creature it self also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

Or every creature.

22 For we know that all the whole creation groaneth, and travaileth in pain together, until now.

23 And not onely they, but our selves also which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we our selves groan within our selves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.

* Luke 21. 28.

24 For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why should he yet hope for?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, then we with patience wait for it.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit it self maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the minde of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints, according to the will of God.

C H A P. IX.

28 And we know that all things work together for good, to them that love God, to them who are the called according to his purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-born amongst many brethren.

30 Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things? if God be for us, who can be against us?

32 He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all: how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect? it is God that justifieth:

34 Who is he that condemneth? it is Christ that died, yea rather that is risen again, who is at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distresse, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or peril, or sword?

36 (As it is written, * For thy sake we are killed all the day long, we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.) * psal. 44.22.

37 Nay, in all these things we are more then conquerours through him that loved us.

38 For I am perswaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

C H A P. IX.

1 Pauls sorrow for the Jews. 7 All Abrahams seed were not the children of promise. 15 The calling of the Gentiles, and rejecting of the Jews.

I say the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witnesse in the holy Ghost
2 That I have great heavinesse, and continual sorrow in my heart.

TO THE ROMANES.

Ro. 8.
paratid.

3 For I could wish that my self were **||** accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsmen according to the flesh :

Ro. 9.
Arguments.

4 Who are Israelites, to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, and the **||** covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God, and the promises :

5 Whose are the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is over all, God blessed for ever, Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel :

* Gen.
23. 12.

7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children : but * in Isaac shall thy seed be called.

8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God : but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

* Gen.
18. 10.

9 For this is the word of promise, * At this time will I come, and Sara shall have a son.

10 And not onely this, but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac,

11 (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth)

* Gen.

12 It was said unto her, The * elder shall serve the **||** younger.

25. 23.
|| Or,
greater.
|| Or,
lesser.

13 As it is written, * Jacob have I loved, but Esau have I hated.

* Mal.

14 What shall we say then ? Is there unrighteousness with God ? God forbid.

Ex d.

15 For he saith to Moses, * I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.

33. 19.

16 So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

* Exod.
9. 16.

17 For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh, * Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 There

C H A P. IX.

18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will have mercy, and whom he will he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then unto me; Why doth he yet finde fault? for who hath resisted his will?

20 Nay, but O man, who art thou that repliest against God? shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, * Why hast thou made me thus?

21 Hath not the * potter power over the clay, of the same lump, to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?

22 What if God willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much long-suffering the vessels of wrath || fitted to destruction:

23 And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory?

24 Even us whom he hath called, not of the Jews only but also of the Gentiles.

25 As he saith also in Osee, * I will call them my people, which were not my people: and her beloved, which was not beloved.

26 And it shall come to passe, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people: there shall they be called the children of the living God.

27 Elaias also crieth concerning Israel, * Though the number of the children of Israel, be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved.

28 For he will finish the || work, and cut it short in righteousness; because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth.

29 And as Elaias said before, * Except the Lord of saboath had left us a seed, we had been as Sodom, and been made like unto Gomorrah.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith:

31 But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness.

|| 2. 28-
I will
again, or
dispute it,
with
God
* Isaiah
41. 2.
* 1. 2.
18. 6.
wild.
15. 7.
|| Or,
made up.

* Hose
2. 23.
1 Pet. 2.
10.
* Hose
1. 106

* Isaiah
10. 22, 23.

|| Or, the
account

* Isaiah
1. 9.

TO THE ROMANES.

32 Wherefore? because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law: for they stumbled at that stumbling stone,

^{* Isaiah. 8}
14. and

18. 16.

33 As it is written, * Behold, I lay in Stone a stumbling stone, and rock of offence: and whosoever beleeveth on him, shall not be ashamed.

^{2. Pet. 3. 6.}
found.

C H A P. X.

5 The difference of the righteousness of the law, and this of faith: 11 No beleever shall be condemned, whether Jew or Gentile.

Brethren, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2 For I bear them record, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that beleeveth.

^{* Levit.}

18. 5

^{Ezek.}

30. 11.

^{Gal. 3. 12.}

^{* Deut.}

30. 12.

5 For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, that * the man which doth those things shall live by them.

6 But the righteousness which is of faith, speaketh on this wise: * Say not in thine heart, Will I shall ascend into heaven: that is, to bring Christ down from above.

7 Or who shall descend into the deep: that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.

^{* Deut.}

30. 14.

8 But what saith it? * The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that is the word of faith which we preach,

9 That if thou shalt confesse with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt beleve in thine heart, that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.

10 For with the heart man beleeveth unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.

^{* Isaiah}

25. 19.

11 For the scripture saith, * Whosoever beleeveth on him, shall not be ashamed.

12 For there is no difference between the Jew and

C H A P. XI.

and the Greck: for the same Lord ober all is rich unto all that call upon him.

13 * For whosoever shall call upon the Name of the Lord, shall be saved.

* Ios^h
2. 32.
Act^s 2. 21

14 How then shall they call on him in whom they have not beleevd? and how shall they beleve in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?

15 And how shall they preach except they be sent? As it is written, * How beautifull are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things!

* Iſaiah
52. 7.
Nau^m
1. 15.

16 But they have not all obeyed the gospel: for Esaias saith, * Lord who hath beleevd our || re-
port.

* Iſaiah
53. 1
Iohⁿ
12. 38.

17 So then, faith cometh by hearing, and hear-
ing by the word of God.

18 But I say, Have they not heard? Yes verily, * their sound went into all the earth, and their words
into the ends of the world.

* Iſaiah
54. 1
Iohⁿ
12. 38.
1 Cor. the
hearing
of vs.
* Psalm
19. 4.
* Deu.
32. 21

19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First, Moses saith, * I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, * I was
found of them that sought me not: I was made
manifest unto them that asked not after me.

* Iſaiah
65. 1

21 But to Israel he saith, * All day long I have
stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and
gain-saying people.

* Iſaiah
65. 2.

C H A P. XI.

1 God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elected, though the rest were hardened. 12 The Gentiles may not insult over them.

I say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people which he foreknew. Wote ye not what the scripture saith of Elias? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

* 1 King^s
19. 14.

3 * Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and
digged

TO THE ROMANES.

digged down thine altars, and I am left alone, and they seek my life.

^{18.} ^{1 Kings 18.} 4 But what saith the answer of God unto him? I have reserved to my self seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time also, there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace, otherwise work is no more work.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for, but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were **||** blinded.

^{18.} ^{hardened.}
^{* Isaiah}
^{29. 10.}
^{107. re-}
^{morse.}
^{* Isaiah}

8 According as it is written, * God hath given them the spirit of **||** slumber: * eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear unto this day.

^{6. 9.}
^{* psal.}
^{69. 22.}

9 And David saith, * Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling block, and a recompence unto them.

^{* psal.}
^{69. 23.}

10 * Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow down their back alway.

11 I say then; Have they stumbled that they should fall? God forbid. But rather through their fall salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy.

^{107. de-}
^{cay, or,}
^{lulle.}

12 Now if the fall of them be the riches of the world, and the **||** diminishing of them, the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse?

13 For I speak to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office.

14 If by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the world: what shall the receiving of them be, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruit be holy, the lump is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.

17 And if some of the branches be broken off,

CHAP XI.

and thou being a wilde olive-tree wert grafted in
 amongst them, and with them partakest of the root ^{12, for} and fatnelle of the olive-tree: ^{them.}

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou
 boast; thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were bro-
 ken off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Well: because of unbelief they were broken
 off, and thou standest by faith. Be not high minded,
 but fear.

21 For if God spared not the natural branches,
 take heed lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodnesse and severitie
 of God: on them which fell, severitie; but towards
 thee, goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse:
 otherwise thou also shalt be cut off.

23 And they also, if they bide not still in unbelief,
 shall be grafted in: for God is able to graff them
 in again.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive-tree,
 which is wilde by nature, and wert grafted contrary
 to nature in a good olive-tree: how much more
 shall these which be the natural branches, be graffed
 into their own olive-tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye should be
 ignorant of this mysterie (lest ye should be wise in
 your own conceits) that blindness in part is ^{10,} hap-
 ned to Israel, until the fulnesse of the Gentiles ^{hardness} be come in.

26 And so all Israel shall be saved, as it is writ-
 ten, * There shall come out of Zion the Deliverer, * ^{Isaiah}
 and shall turn away ungodlinesse from Jacob. ^{59.20}

27 For this is my covenant unto them, when I
 shall take away their sin.

28 As concerning the gospel, they are enemies
 for your sakes: but as touching the election, they
 are beloved for the fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are with-
 out repentance.

30 For as ye in times past have not ^{10,} beleebed ^{obeyed}
 God, yet have now obtained mercy through their
 unbelief:

TO THE ROMANES.

1 Cor.
obeyed.
glor. that
them all
up toge-
ther.

31 Even so have these also now not beleev'd that
through your mercie they also may obtain mercie.

32 For God hath concluded them all in unbel-
list, that he might have mercie upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom,
and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his
judgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 * For who hath known the minde of the
Lord, or who hath been his counsellour?

35 O: who hath first given to him, and it shall be
recompensed unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are
all things: to whom be glory for ever. Amen.

C H A P. XII.

1 Gods mercies must move us to please God. 6
Every man must attend his calling. 9 Love and
other duties required. 19 Revenge forbidden.

I Beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies
of God, that ye present your bodies a living sa-
crifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your
reasonable service.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye
transformed by the renewing of your minde, that ye
may prove what is that good, that acceptable and
perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace given unto me,
to every man that is among you, not to think of
himself more highly then he ought to think, but to
think soberly, according as God hath dealt to
every man the measure of faith.

1 Cor. to
sobriety.

4 For as we have many members in one body,
and all members have not the same office:

5 So we being many are one body in Christ,
and every one members one of another.

6 Having then gifts differing according to the
grace that is given to us, whether prophesie, let us
prophesie according to the proportion of faith:

7 O: ministry, let us wait on our ministering:
or he that teacheth, on teaching;

8 O: he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that
giveth, let him do it with simplicitie: he that
ruleth, with diligence: he that sheweth mercie, with
cheerfulness.

1 Cor. im-
proueth,
1 Cor. libe-
rally,

C H A P. XIII.

9 Let love be without dissimulation: abhor that which is evil, cleave to that which is good.

10 Be kindly affectioned one to another ^{82. in the love of the brethren.} with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another.

11 Not slothfull in businesse: fervent in spirit, serving the Lord.

12 Rejoycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing instant in prayer.

13 Distributing to the necessity of saints, given to hospitalitie.

14 Blesse them which persecute you, blesse, and curse not.

15 Rejoyce with them that do rejoyce, and weep with them that weep.

16 Be of the same minde one towards another. Hide not high things, but ^{102. be contented with mean things.} condescend to men of low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits.

17 Recompenſe to no man evil for evil. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

19 Dearly beloved, avenge not your selves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, ^{* Deut. 32. 35. * Prov. 25. 21.} Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord.

20 Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him: if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head.

21 Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

C H A P. XIII

1 Our duties to magistrates. 8 Love is the fulfilling of the law. 11 Against gluttony, drunkenesse, and the works of daranesse.

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers: for there is no power but of God. The powers that be, are ^{102. ordered.} ordained of God.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receive to themselves damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terrour to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? no that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same.

TO THE ROMANES.

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good: but if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doth evil.

5 Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake.

6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are Gods ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.

7 Render therefore to all their dues, tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honour to whom honour.

8 Ow no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law.

9 For this. Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet, and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

10 Love worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer then when we believed,

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.

13 Let us walk honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying:

14 But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

C H A P. X I I I I.

3 Men may not condemn nor condemn one another for things indifferent, 13 but take heed giving offence.

HIm that is weak in the faith receive you, but not to doubtful disputations.

11
ob
to
up
th

4
4
9
1
2

Dr. e.
only

Dr.
not to
judge his
doubtful
thoughts.

C H A P. XIII.

2 For one beleeveth that he may eat all things: another who is weak, eateth herbs.

3 Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, judge him that eateth: for God hath received him.

4 Who art thou that judgest another mans servant: to his own master he standeth or falleth: pea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand.

5 One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own minde.

*10r. folly
affured.
10r. ob-
serveth.*

6 He that regardeth a day, regardeth it unto the Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks: and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks.

7 For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself.

8 For whether we live, we live unto the Lord: and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lords.

9 For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead, and living.

10 But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? we shall all stand before the judgement seat of Christ.

11 For it is written, "As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confesse to God."

12 So then, every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

13 Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumbling block or an occasion to fall in his brothers way.

14 I know and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of it self: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean.

15 But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat:

*10r. com-
mon.
10r. com-
mon.*

TO THE ROMANES.

¶ Gr. ac-
cording
to cha-
rity.
1 Cor.
8. 11.

now walkest thou not \dagger caritably. Destroy not
him with thy meat, for whom Christ died.

16 Let not then your good be evil spoken of.

17 For the kingdom of God is not meat, and
drink: but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the
holy Ghost.

18 For he that in these things serveth Christ, is
acceptable to God, and approved of men.

19 Let us therefore follow after the things
which make for peace, and things wherewith our
may edifie another.

20 For meat destroy not the work of God: all
things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man
who eateth with offence.

21 It is good neither to eat \ast flesh, nor to drink
wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth,
or is offended, or is made weak.

22 Hast thou faith? have it to thy self before
God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in
that thing which he alloweth.

23 And he that doubteth, is damned if he eat,
because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is
not of faith, is sin.

C H A P. XV

1 The strong must bear with the weak. 2 We
must not please our selves, γ but receive one
another, as Christ did us all.

WE then that are strong, ought to bear the
infirmities of the weak, and not to please
our selves.

2 Let every one of us please his neighbour for
his good to edification.

3 For even Christ pleased not himself, but as it
is written, \ast The reproaches of them that repro-
ached thee fell on me.

4 For whatsoever things were written afore-
time, were written for our learning, that we through
patience and comfort of the scriptures might have
hope.

5 \ast Now the God of patience and consolation,
grant you to be like minded one towards another,
according to Christ Jesus:

¶ Titus
1. 15.

¶ 1 Cor.
8. 13.

¶ Or, di-
scerneth
and per-
ceiveth a
differ-
ence be-
tween
meats,

¶ psalm
69. 9.

¶ 1 Cor.

1. 10.
¶ Or, after
the ex-
ample of

C H A P. XV.

6 That ye may with one minde and one mouth glorifie God, even the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receive ye one another, as Christ also received us to the glory of God.

8 Now I say, that Iesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercy, as it is written, * For this cause I will * Psalms
confesse to thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto 117. 1
thy Name.

10 And again he saith, * Rejoyce ye Gentiles with his people.

11 And again, * Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud him all ye people.

12 And again Elaias saith, * There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trust.

13 Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in beleeving, that ye may abound in hope through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my self also am perswaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodnesse, filled with all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldy unto you in some sort, as putting you in minde, because of the grace that is given to me of God,

16 That I should be the minister of Iesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministring the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I have therefore whereof I may glory through Iesus Christ, in those things which pertain to God.

18 For I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient by word and deed,

19 Through mighty signes and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God, so that from Ierusalem

* Deut.

32. 43.

* Psalm.

117. 1

* Isaiah

11. 10.

for sa-

crificing

TO THE ROMANES.

I am and round about unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ.

20 Yea, so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was named, lest I should build upon an other mans foundation :

21 But as it is written, * To whom he was not spoken of, they shall see : and they that have not heard, shall understand.

22 For which also I have been much hindered from coming to you.

23 But now having no more place in these parts, and having a great desire these many yeers to come unto you :

24 Whensoever I take my journey into Spain, I will come to you : for I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on my way thitherward by you, if I first be somewhat filled with your company.

25 But now I go unto Jerusalem, to minish unto the saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia, to make a certain contribution for the poor saints which are at Jerusalem.

27 It hath pleased them verily, and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal.

28 When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain.

29 And I am sure, that when I come unto you, I shall come in the fulnesse of the blessing of the gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Jesus Christs sake, and for the love of the Spirit, that ye strive together with me, in your prayers for God for me,

31 That I may be delivered from them that will not believe in Judea, and that my service, which I have for Jerusalem, may be accepted of the saints :

32 That I may come unto you with joy by the

1 of
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32

* Isaiah
52.15.

8 Or,
many
ways, or
often-
times.

4 Gr. with
you,
verse. 32

12 Or, are
disobedi-
ent.

C H A P. XVI.

will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of grace be with you all. Amen.

C H A P. XVI.

3 Paul sendeth greeting to many: 17 and adviseth them to take heed of those that cause division and offences, 21 and endeth with praise and thanksgiving.

I Commend unto you Phoebe our sister, which is a servant of the church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you; for she hath been a succourer of many, and of my self also.

3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus:

4 (Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.)

5 Likewise greet the church that is in their house. Salute my wellbeloved Epnetus, who is the first-fruits of Achaia unto Christ.

6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia my kinsmen, and my fellows prisoners who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.

9 Salute Urbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus household.

11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the household of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.

14 Salute Aspercritus, Phlegon, Hermes, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute

TO THE ROMANES.

15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences, contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned, and avoid them.

18 For they that are such, serve not our Lord Jesus Christ but their own belly, and by good words, and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.

20 And the God of peace shall shortly bring you under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

21 Timotheus my work-fellow, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater my kinsmen salute you.

22 I Tertius who wrote this epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you, according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery which was kept secret since the world began,

26 But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith,

27 To God only wise be glory through Jesus Christ, for ever. Amen.

Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe servant of the church at Cenchrea.

|| Or,
harmles.
|| Or,
tread.

from Paul's Holy roll

1502

¶ The first epistle of PAUL the apostle to
the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

After salutation and thanksgiving, 10 he exhorteth to unity, and 12 reproveth their dissensions.
18 God doth shew the wisdom of the wise.



And called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God, and Sothenes our brother.

2 Unto the church of God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to be saints, with all that in every place call upon the Name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours.

* Acts
13. 9.
* Rom.
1. 7.

3 Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God alwayes on your behalf, for the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ,

5 That in every thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed in you.

7 So that ye come behinde in no gift: waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ,

† Cor. re-
velation.

8 Who also shall confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blamelesse in the day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 * God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.

* 1 Thess.
3. 14.

10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and that there be no divisions among you: but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same minde, and in the same judgement.

† Cor.
schism.

11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith,

I am

I. CORINTHIANS.

* Acts
18.24.

I am of Paul, and I of * Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I of Christ.

13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul?

* Acts
18.8.

14 I thank God that I baptized none of you, but * Crispus and Gaius:

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine own name.

16 And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

* 2 Pet.
1.16.
* 1 Cor.
13.14.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel: * not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.

18 For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish, foolishness: but unto us which are saved, it is the * power of God.

* Rom.
1.16.

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the * understanding of the prudent.

* Isaiah
27.14.

20 * Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world?

* Isaiah
33.18.

21 * For after that, in the wisdom of God, the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching, to save them that believe.

* Rom.
1.20.

22 For the * Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom.

* Mark.
12.38.

23 But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumbling block, and unto the Greeks, foolishness:

24 But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God.

25 Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men: and the weakness of God is stronger than men.

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called.

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the wise: and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to confound the things which are mighty:

C H A P. II.

28 And base things of the world, and things which are dispised hath God chosen, yea and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are.

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Iesus, who of God is made unto us, wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That according as it is written, * He that glorifieth, let him glory in the Lord. Jes. 9. 23.

C H A P. III.

1 Pauls preaching, though without excellency of speech, or of humane wisdom, yet 6 excelleth the wisdom of this world, and 14 the natural mans understanding.

AND I, brethren, when I came to you, * came * Wisd. 1. 17.
not with excellency of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God.

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Iesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weaknesse, and in fear, and in much trembling.

4 And my speech, and my preaching, * was not * 1 Pet. 1. 10. 100. perswivable.
with enticing words of mans wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:

5 That your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

6 Notwithstanding, we speak wisdom among them that are perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this world, that come to nought:

7 But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom which God ordained before the world unto our glory.

8 Which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

9 But as it is written, * Eye hath not seen, * Isa. 64. 4
nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.

10 But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God.

I. CORINTHIANS.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.

12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

* 2 Pet
3.16.

13 * Which things also we speak, not in words which mans wisdom teacheth, but which the holy Ghost teacheth, comparing spirituall things with spirituall.

* Prov.
27.10.

¶ Or, discerneth.

¶ Or, discerned.

* Rom.
13.14.

¶ Gr.
shall.

14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are foolishnesse unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spirituallly discerned.

15 * But he that is spirituall is judgeth all things, yet he himself is not judged of no man.

16 * For who hath known the minde of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the minde of Christ.

CHAP. III.

3 Strife and divisions are arguments of a fleshly minde. ¶ He that planteth, and he that watereth is nothing.

AND I, brethren, could not speak unto you, as unto spirituall, but as unto carnall, even as unto babes in Christ.

2 I have fed you with milk, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to bear it, neither now are ye able.

¶ Or,
factions.

¶ Gr. according
to man,

3 For ye are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men?

4 For while one saith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollos, are ye not carnal?

5 Who then is Paul? and who is Apollos? he ministers by whom ye believe, even as the Lord gave to every man.

6 I have planted, Apollos watered: but God gave the increase.

7 So then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither

CHAP. III.

neither he that watereth: but God that giveth the increase.

8 As he that planteth, and he that watereth, are one: * and every man shall receive his own s.
62. 13. Gal. 6. 5.

9 For we are labourers together with God, ye are Gods || husbandry, ye are Gods building.
10. tillage.

10 According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise-master builder I have laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon.

11 For other foundation can no man lay, then that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.

12 Now if any man build on this foundation, gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble:

13 Every mans work shall be made manifest. For the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire, and the fire shall try every mans work of what sort it is.
1 Cor. 13 revealed

14 If any mans work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.

15 If any mans work shall be burnt, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved: yet so as by fire.

16 * Know ye not, that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?
* 1 Cor. 6. 19. 12. de- Troy.

17 If any man || defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are.

18 Let no man deceive himself: if any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

19 For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God: for it is written, * He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.

20 And again, * the Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.
* Job 5. 12.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men, for all things are yours.
* Gal. 94. 21.

22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come, all are yours,

23 And ye are Christs, and Christ is Gods.

I. CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. III.

1 How to account of ministers. 7 we have nothing but we have received it. 9 The apostles 15 are our father in Christ.

Let a man so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.
2 Moreover, it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithful.

3 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of mans judgement: yea, I judge not mine own self.

4 For I know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justified; but he that judgeth me, is the Lord.

* Matth. 7. 1. Rom. 7. 1. 5 * Therefore judge nothing before the time, till the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.

6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to my self, and to Apollo, for your sakes: that ye might learn in us not to think of men above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.

4 Gr. dl. Kingd. meth ther. 7 For who maketh thee to differ from another? and what hast thou that thou didst not receive? Now if thou didst receive it, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received it?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us, and I would to God ye did reign, that we also might reign with you.

9 For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were men appointed to death. For we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

10 We are fools for Christs sake, but ye are wise in Christ. We are weak, but ye are strong: we are honourable, but we are despised.

* Acts 2. 14. 1 Thess. 2. 1. 11 Even unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling place,

2 Thess. 3. 1. 12 * And labour, working with our own hands:

CHAP. V.

ing rebiled. we blisse : being persecuted, we suffer it:

13 * Being defamed, we intreat : we are made * Manh.
as the filth of the world, and are the off-scouring of 3.44.
all things unto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you, but as
my beloved sons I warn you.

15 For though you have ten thousand instructors
in Christ, yet have ye not many fathers : for in
Christ Jesus I have begotten you through þ gospel.

16 Therefore, I beseech you, be ye followers,
of me.

17 For this cause have I sent unto you Timo-
theus, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the
Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my
words which be in Christ, as I teach every where
in every church.

18 Now some are puffed up, as though I would
not come to you.

19 * But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord
will, and will know, not the speech of them which
are puffed up, but the power. * Act. 19.21.
James 4.15.

20 For the kingdom of God is not in word, but
in power.

21 What will ye ? shall I come unto you with a
rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meeknesse.

CHAP. V.

1 The incestuous person. 7 The old leaven must
be purged out. 10 Hainous offenders to be a-
voiced.

It is reported commonly, that there is fornication
among you, and such fornication as is not
so much as named among the Gentiles, that one
should have his fathers wife.

2 And ye are puffed up, and have not rather
mourned, that he that hath done this deed, might be
taken away from among you.

3 * For I verily, as absent in body, but present * Col. 2.5.
in spirit, have judged already, as though I were
present, concerning him that hath so done this deed, 1 Cor.
determined,

4 In the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ,
when ye are gathered together, and my spirit, with
the power of our Lord Jesus Christ.

R 2

5 * To

R

19

I. CORINTHIANS.

* 1 Tim.
3.20.

5 * To deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus.

* Gal. 5.9

6 Your glorying is not good: * know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?

W^{ch}. is
Pain.
of ho.
day,

7 Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our paschever is sacrificed for us.

8 Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice, and wickednesse: but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

9 I wrote unto you in an epistle, not to company with fornicators.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then must ye needs go out of the world.

11 But now I have written unto you, not to keep company, if an y man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner: with such a one, no not to eat.

12 For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within?

13 But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore put away from among your selves that wicked person.

CHAP. VI.

1 Go not to law with the brethren, & especially under infidels. 9 The unrighteous shall not inherit Gods kingdom. 15 Our bodies are Christs members.

DAre any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? And if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? How much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have judgements of things pertaining

CHAP. VI.

ing to this life, let them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.

5 I speak to your shame. Is it so, that there not a wise man amongst you : no not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren ?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers ?

7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another : why do ye not rather take wrong ? why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded ?

8 Nay, you do wrong and defraud, and that your brethren.

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God ? Be not deceived : neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor assassinate, nor abusers of themselves in mankind,

10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the Name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient : all things are lawful for me, 10. profitable. but I will not be brought under the power of any.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power.

15 Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot ? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot, is one body : for two (saith he) shall be one flesh.

17 But he which is joined unto the Lord, is one Spirit.

18 Flee fornication : every sin that a man doth, is without the body : but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his own body.

I. CORINTHIANS.

19 What know ye not that your body is the temple of the holy Ghost which is in you which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit which are Gods.

CHAP. VII.

2 Marriage a remedy against fornication, 10 not lightly to be esteemed. 18 Every one must be content with his calling. 25 Of virginity.

NOW concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me, It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.

3 Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her own body, but the husband: and likewise also the husband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.

5 Defraud you not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give your selves to fasting and prayer, and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

6 But this I speak by permission, and not a commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I myself: but every man hath his proper gift of God, as after this manner, and another after that.

8 I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I.

9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.

10 And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But to the rest speak I, not the Lord, any brother hath a wife that beforeverly not, and the

C H A P. VII.

he pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that belongeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him.

14 For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband; else were your children unclean, but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: but God hath called us to peace.

1 Cor. in peace.

16 For what knowest thou O wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walk, and so ordain I in all churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised: is any called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called being a servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, he is a servant, is the Lord's free man: likewise also he that is called being free, is Christ's servant.

1 Cor. made free.

23 Ye are bought with a price, be not ye the servants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins, I have no commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgement as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for the present distress, I say, that it is good for a man so to be.

1 Cor. not cessary.

I. CORINTHIANS.

27 Art thou bound unto a wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seek not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned, and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned: neither thou, such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short. It remaineth that both they that have wives, be as though they had none:

30 And they that weep, as though they wept not: and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that use this world, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this world passeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:

33 But he that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 There is difference also between a wife and a virgin: the unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy, both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

35 And this I speak for your own profit, not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she passeth the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry.

37 Nevertheless, he that standeth steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart, that he will keep his virgin, both well:

38 So then, he that giveth her in marriage, doth well: but he that giveth her not in marriage, doth better.

39 The wife is bound by the law as long as her husband liveth: but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will, only in the Lord.

CHAP. VIII.

49 But he is happier if he so abide, after my judgement: and I think also that I have the Spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

1 We must abstain from meats offered to idols, 8, 9 and not abuse our liberty to offend our brethren, 11 but bridle our knowledge with charity.

NOW as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love God, the same is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth (as there be gods many, and lords many)

6 But to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we live in him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we live by him. 1 Cor. for him, Rom. 11.36.

7 Wherebeit there is not in every man that knowledge: for some with conscience of the idol unto this hour, eat it as a thing offered unto an idol, and their conscience being weak, is defiled.

8 But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither if we eat, we are the better: neither if we eat not, we are the worse. 1 Cor. have we the more.

9 But take heed lest by any means this liberty of yours become a stumbling block to them that are weak. 1 Cor. have we the less.

10 For if any man see those which have knowledge, sit at meat in the idols temple: shall not the conscience of him that is weak, be emboldened, to eat those things which are offered to idols? 1 Cor. power.

11 And through thy knowledge, shall the weak brother perish, for whom Christ died?

I. CORINTHIANS.

12 But when ye sin so against the brethren, and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against Christ.

13 Wherefore if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

1 Pauls liberty. 7 The minister must live by the gospel: 15, 18 yet he would not be chargeable 22 nor offensive. 24 Our life is like a race.

AM I not an apostle? am I not free? have I not seen Jesus Christ our Lord? are not you my work in the Lord?

2 If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtlesse I am to you: for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answer to them y^e do examine me is this:

4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?

1 Cor.
woman.

5 Have we not power to lead about a sisters wife as well as other apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord and Cephas?

6 O? I onely and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working?

7 Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? Who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? O? who feedeth a flock, and entereth not of the milk of the flock?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?

* Deut.
25.4.

9 For it is written in the law of Moses, * Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn: both God take care for oxen?

10 O? saith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes no doubt this is written: that he that ploweth, should plow in hope: and that he that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

* Rom.
15.27.

11 * If we have sown unto you spiritual things, is it a great thing if we shall reap your carnal things?

12 If others be partakers of this power over you, are not we rather? Nevertheless, we have not used this power: but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gospel of Christ.

C H A P. IX.

13 * Do ye not know that they which minister ^{• Deut.}
about holy things, live of the things of the tem- ^{18.1.}
ple? and they which wait at the altar, are parta- ^{18.1.}
kers with the altar?

14 Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they
which preach the gospel, should live of the gospel.

15 But I have used none of these things. Nei-
ther have I written these things, that it should be
so done unto me, for it were better for me to die, then
that any man should make my glorying void.

16 For though I preach the gospel, I have res-
ting to glory of: for necessity is laid upon me,
yea, wo is unto me, if I preach not the gospel.

17 For if I do this thing willingly, I have a
reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of
the gospel is committed unto me.

18 What is my reward then? Merely that when
I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of
Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power
in the gospel.

19 For though I be free from all men, yet have
I made my self servant unto all, that I might gain
the more.

20 And unto the Jews I became as a Jew,
that I might gain the Jews: to them that are un-
der the law, as under the law, that I might gain
them that are under the law:

21 To them that are without law, as without
law (being not without law to God, but under the
law to Christ) that I might gain them that are
without law.

22 To the weak became I as weak, that I
might gain the weak. I am made all things to
all men, that I might by all means save some.

23 And this I do for the gospels sake, that I
might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know ye not that they which run in a race,
run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run, that
ye may obtain.

25 And every man that striveth for the mastery
is temperate in all things: Now they do it to ob-
tain a corruptible crown, but we an incorruptible.

I. CORINTHIANS.

26 I therefore so run, not as uncertainly: I fight I, not as one that beateth the air:

27 But I keep under my body, and bring it into subjection: lest that by any means, when I have preached to others, I myself should be a castaway.

C H A P. X.

1 The Jews sacraments 6 are types of ours; 7 and their punishments, 11 our examples.

2 We must not make the Lords table the table of devils.

Moreover brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed thorow the sea:

2 And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud, and in the sea:

3 And did all eat the same spirituall meat;

4 And did all drink the same spirituall drink: (for they drank of that spirituall Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.)

Or. went with them.

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

Or. our figures.

6 Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted.

** Exod. 32. 6. Psal.*

7 Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them, as it is written, * The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play.

** Exod. 32. 6. * Numb.*

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and * fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

25. 9.

9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, * and were destroyed of serpents.

** Numb. 21. 6.*

10 Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were * destroyed of the destroyer.

** Numb. 14. 37.*

11 Now all these things hapned unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.

Or. types.

12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.

Or. moderate.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that you are able:

CHAP. X.

able: but will with the temptation also make a way to escape that ye may be able to bear it.

14 Wherefore my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

15 I speak as to wise men: judge ye what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which we blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For we being many, are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar?

19 What say I then? that the idol is any thing? or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing?

20 But I say, that the things which the Gentiles * sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils. * Deut. 32. 17. Psal. 106. 37.

21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lords table, and of the table of devils.

22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for me, but all things are not expedient: All things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not.

24 Let no man seek his own, but every man anothers wealeth.

25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

26 For * the earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof. * Deut. 10. 14. Psal. 24. 1.

27 If any of them that believe not, bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go, whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say unto you, This is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not for his sake that offered it, and for conscience sake. * The earth is the Lords, and the fulnesse thereof. * Deut. 10. 14. Psal. 24. 1.

29 Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the others:

I. CORINTHIANS.

others: for why is my liberty judged of another mans conscience?

12.
thank-
giving.

30 For if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of, for that for which I give thanks?

31 Whether there be eat or drink, or what soever ye do, do all to the glory of God,

46.
Greek 1.

32 Give none offence neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God

33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.

CHAP. XI.

1 He reproveth them because in holy assemblies,

4 Men prayed with their heads covered, 6 and women uncovered: 21 for profaning the Lords supper: 25 The first institution thereof.

Be ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ.

10. tra-
ditions.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered them to you.

3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ: and the head of the woman is the man, and the head of Christ is God.

4 Every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head.

5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered, dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as, if she were shaven.

6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.

7 For as man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is the head of the church: but the church of the man.

9 Whether was the man created for the woman: but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head, because of the angels.

11 Nevertheless, neither is the man without the

1 That is
a cover-
ing, in
figure
that she
is under
the pow-
er of her
husband.

CHAP. XI.

the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man: even so is the man also by the woman: but all things of God.

13 Judge in your selves, is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature it self teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him?

15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a covering. Or, veil.

16 But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare unto you, I praise you not, that you come together, not for the better, but for the worse.

18 For first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be divisions among you, and I partly beleve it. Or, schisms.

19 For there must be also heresies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifest among you. Or, sects.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, this is not to eat the Lords supper. Or, ye cannot eat.

21 For in eating, every one taketh before other his own supper, and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 What, have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or despise ye the church of God, and shame them that have not? what shall I say to you? shall I praise you in this? I praise you not. Or, them that are poor.

23 For I have received of the Lord that which also I delivered unto you, that the Lord Jesus the same night in which he was betrayed took bread:

24 And when he had given thanks, he brake it, and said, Take, eat, this is my body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me. * Matth. 26. 16. Mark 14. 22. Luke 22. 19.

25 After the same manner also he took the cup when he had supped, saying, This cup is the new testament in my blood: this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me. Or, new.

26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lords death till he come. Or, shew.

27: Take

I. CORINTHIANS.

27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, and drinke this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drinke of that cup.

10.
judge-
ment.

29 For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh || damnation to himself, not discerning the Lords body.

30 For this cause many are weak, and sickly among you, and many sleep.

31 For if we would judge our selves, we should not be judged.

32 But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world.

33 Wherefore my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.

10.
judge-
ment.

34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home, that ye come not together unto || condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

CHAP. XII.

1 Spiritual gifts, 4 are divers, 7 yet all to profit.

12 As it is in the natural body, 17 so it should be in the mystical body of Christ.

NOW concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant.

2 Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away into these dumb idols, even as ye were led.

10.
An-
them.

3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus || accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the holy Ghost.

4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord:

6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God, which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wisdom, to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit:

9 To

C H A P. XII.

9 To another faith by the same Spirit: to another the gifes of healing by the same Spirit:

10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophecy, to another discerning of spirits, to another divers kindes of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But all these worketh that one & the self same Spirit, dividing to every man liberally as he will.

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ.

13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or ^{Gr.} Gentiles, whether we be bond or free: and have been all made ^{Gr.} Greeks, to drink into one Spirit.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body: is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling?

18 But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

19 And if they were all one member, where were the body?

20 But now are they many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again, the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

22 Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary.

23 And those members of the body, which we think to be lesse honourable, upon these we bestow more ^{Or,} abundant honour, and our uncomely parts have ^{Plur. or,} more abundant comeliness.

24 For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more

I. CORINTHIANS.

For di-
vision.

more abundant honour to that part which lacked;
25 That there should be no schisme in the body,
but that the members should have the same care one
for another:

26 And whether one member suffer, all the mem-
bers suffer with it: or one member be honoured, all
the members rejoice with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members
in particular.

For
kisses.

28 And God hath set some in the church, first
apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, af-
ter that miracles, then gifes of healings, helps, go-
vernmentes, diversities of tongues.

For
powers.

29 Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all
teachers? are all workers of miracles?

30 Have all the gifes of healing? do all speak
with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earnestly the best gifes: And ye
shew I unto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

1 The most excellent gifts are nothing without
charity. 4 The praise thereof: 13 it is prefer-
red before hope and faith.

Though I speak with the tongues of men and
of angels, and have not charity, I am become
as sounding brasse, or a tinkling cymball.

2 And though I have the gift of prophecy, and
understand all mysteries, and all knowledge: and
though I have all faith, so that I could remove
mountains, and have no charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the
poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and
have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

For, is
not rash.

4 Charity suffereth long, and is kind: charity
envieth not: charity is vauntereth not it self, is not
puffed up.

For with
the truth

5 Doth not behave it self unseemly, seeketh not
her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil.

6 Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in
the truth:

7 Beareth all things, beleebeth all things,
hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charity

CHAP. XIII.

8 Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues they shall cease; whether there be knowlege, it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I understood as a childe, I thought as a childe: but when I became a man, I put away childish things;

12 For now we see thorow a glasse & darkly: but then face to face: now I know in part, but then shall I know, even as also I am known.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three: but the greatest of these is charity.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Prophecie commended and preferred before speaking with tongues. 34 Women must not speak in the church.

Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie.

2 For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him: he loveth in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to edification and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in an unknown tongue, edifieth himself: but he that prophesieth, edifieth the church.

5 I would that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth, then he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine.

7 And even things without life, giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped, or harped?

I. CORINTHIANS.

8 For if the trumpet gibe an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battel?

9 So likewise you, except ye utter by the tongue words ^{†Gr. fig-1} facile to be understood, how shall it be known ^{nificant.} what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air.

10 There are, it may be, so many kindes of voices in the world, and none of them are without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh a Barbarian, and he that speaketh shall be a Barbarian unto me.

†Gr. of
spirits.

12 Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church.

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful.

15 What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and will pray with understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also.

16 Else, when thou shalt blesse with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned, say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest?

17 For thou verily givest thanks well: but the other is not edified.

18 I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than you all.

19 Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, than by my voice I might teach others also, then ten thousand words in an unknown tongue.

20 Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit, in malice be ye children, but in understanding be ye men.

21 In the law it is written, With men of other tongues, and other lips, will I speak unto this people: and yet for all that will they not hear me, saith the Lord.

†Gr.
perfect,
or of a
ripe age.
* Isaiah
28. 11.

CHAP. XIII.

22 Wherefore cognues are for a signe, not to them that beleebe, but to them that beleebe not: but prophesying seruech not for them that beleebe not, but for them which beleebe.

23 If therefore the whole church be come together into some place, and all speak with tongues, and there come in those that are unlearned, or unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad?

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in one that beleebeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all.

25 And thus are the secrets of his heart made manifest, and so falling down on his face, he will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truth.

26 Now is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation: let all things be done unto edifying.

27 If any man speak in an unknown tongue, let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interpret.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keep silence in the church, and let him speak to himself, and to God.

29 Let the prophets speak two or three, and let the other judge.

30 If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophesie one by one, that all may learn, and all may be comforted.

32 And the spirits of the prophets are subject to the prophets.

33 For God is not the author of confusion, 1 Cor. 14. 33. but of peace, as in all churches of the saints.

34 Let your women keep silence in the churches: unquiet-ness. for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be under obedience: as also saith the law.

35 And if they will learn any thing, let them ask Gen. 3. 16. their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speak in the church.

36 What?

I. CORINTHIANS.

36 What? came the word of God out from you?
or came it unto you only?

37 If any man think himself to be a prophet, or
spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that
I write unto you, are the commandments of the
Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ig-
norant.

39 Wherefore brethren, obey to prophesie, and
forbid not to speak with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently and in order.

CHAP. XV.

3 By Christs resurrection, 12 he proveth the ne-
cessity of our resurrection: 21 the fruit, 35 and
manner thereof, 51 and the change of them
that shall be found alive.

MOREOVER, brethren, I declare unto you the
gospel which I preached unto you, which also
to you have received, and wherein ye stand.

2 By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in me-
mory what I preached unto you, unless ye have
believed it in vain.

1 Or,
hold fast.
2 Or,
by what
speech,

3 For I delivered unto you first of all, that which
I also received, how that Christ died for our sins ac-
cording to the scriptures.

4 And that he was buried, and that he rose again
the third day according to the scriptures.

5 And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the
twelve.

6 After that he was seen of above five hundred
brethren at once: of whom the greater part remain
unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

7 After that he was seen of James, then of all
the apostles.

8 And last of all he was seen of me also, and
have been out of due time.

10 Or, an
abusive.

9 For I am the least of the apostles, that am
meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted
the church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am:
and his grace which was bestowed upon me, was
not in vain: but I labored more abundantly
than they.

C H A P. XV.

they all, yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me.

11 Therefore whether it were I, or they, so we preach, and so ye beleeved.

12 Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain:

15 Yea, and we are found false witnesses of God, because we have testified of God, that he raised up Christ: whom he raised not up, if so be that the dead rise not.

16 For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain, ye are yet in your sins.

18 Then they also which are fallen asleep in Christ are perished.

19 If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first-fruits of them that slept.

21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

23 But every man in his own order, Christ the first-fruits, afterward they that are Christs at his coming.

24 Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father, when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority and power.

25 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

26 The last enemy that shall be destroyed, is death.

27 For he hath put all things under his feet; but when he saith, All things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted which did put all things under him.

28 And

I. CORINTHIANS.

28 And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptized for the dead?

30 And why stand we in jeopardy every hour?

*Some
read, our.
Or, to
speak
after the
manner
of men,*

31 I protest by your rejoicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If I after the manner of men, I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me if the dead rise not? let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die.

33 Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteousness, and sin not: for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come?

36 Thou fool, that which thou sowest, is not quickened, except it die,

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may come of wheat, or of some other grain.

38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one kinde of flesh of man, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestriall is another:

41 There is one glory of the Sun, another of the moon, and another glory of the stars: for one star differeth from another star in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead, it is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption:

43 It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it is sown in weaknesse, it is raised in power:

44 It is sown a natural body, it is raised a spiri-
ritual

CHAP. XV.

naturall body. There is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall body.

45 And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul, the last Adam was made a quick ing spirit.

46 Howbeit, that was not first which is spirituall: but that which is naturall, and after ward that which is spirituall,

47 The first man is of the earth earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven.

48 As is the earthy, such are they that are earthy; and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

49 And as we have born the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God: neither can corruption inherit incorruption.

51 Behold I shew you a mystery: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump, (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.)

53 For this corruptible, must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortall shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to passe the saying that is written, * Death is swallowed up in victory.

* Hosea
13. 14.

O Death, where is thy sting? O Grave, where is thy victory?

1 Cor. 15.

55 The sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law.

56 But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ.

57 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, immovable, alwayes abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

I. CORINTHIANS:

CHAP. XVI.

- 1 The brethrens wants must be relieved. 10 Timothy commended. 13 Friendly admonitions. 19 Salutations.

NOW concerning the collection for the saints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye.

2 Upon the first day of the week, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoever you shall approve by your letters, them will I send to bring your liberalitie into Jerusalem.

16r.
gilt.

4 And if it be meet that I go also, they shall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I shall passe through Macedonia: for I do passe through Macedonia.

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey, whithersoever I go.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus until Pentecost.

9 For a great door and effectually is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord as I also do.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you with the brethren, but his will was not at all to come at this time: but he will come when he shall have convenient time.

13 Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you like men: be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charity.

15 I beseech you brethren, (ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first-fruits of Achaia, and that they have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints,)

16 The

CHAP. I.

16 That ye submit your selves unto such, and to every one that helpeth with us, and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the coming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they have supplied.

18 For they have refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore acknowledge ye them that are such.

19 The churches of Asia salute you: Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you: greet ye one another with an holy kisse.

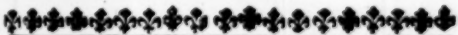
21 The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand.

22 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maranatha.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

24 My lode be with you all in Christ Jesus, Amen.

The first epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi by Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, and Timotheus.



¶ THE SECOND EPISTLE of PAUL the apostle to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 The apostle encourageth them against troubles, and sheweth the sincerity of his preaching, and excuseth his not coming unto them.

Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, unto the church of God, which is at Corinth, with all the saints, which are in all Achaia:

2 Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 Blessed be God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus

II. CORINTHIANS.

Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort,

4 Who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort wherewith we our selves are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also aboundeth by Christ.

6 And whether we be afflicted it is for your consolation and salvation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings, which we also suffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your consolation and salvation.

¶ Or, is wrought.

7 And our hope of you is stedfast, knowing that as you are partakers of the sufferings, so shall ye be also of the consolation.

8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure, above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life.

¶ Or, answer.

9 But we had the sentence of death in our selves, that we should not trust in our selves, but in God, which raiseth the dead.

10 Who delivered us from so great a death, and both deliver: in whom we trust that he will yet deliver us.

11 You also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift bestowed upon us, by the means of many persons, thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

12 For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity, and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, and may abundantly to you-wards.

13 For we write none other things unto you, than what you read or acknowledge, and I trust ye shall acknowledge, even to the end.

14 As also you have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoicing, even as ye also are ours, in the day of the Lord Jesus.

15 And in this confidence I was minded to come

CHAP. II.

unto you before, that you may have a second || be- 1 Cor.
grace.
nefit :

16 And to passe by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightnesse? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay :

18 But as God is true, our || word toward you was not yea, and nay. 1 Cor.
preach-
ing.

19 For the Son of God Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, even by me, and Sylva- nus, and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promises of God in him are yea, and in him amen, unto the glory of God by us.

21 Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God.

22 Who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover, I call God for a record upō my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy : for by faith ye stand.

CHAP. II.

1 The reason of his not coming. 6 Of the excom-
municate person. 12 Paul cometh to Troas,

12 from thence to Macedonia. 14 The successe
of his preaching in every place.

BUT I determined this with my self, that I would not come again to you in heavinesse.

2 For if I make you sorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but I same which is made sorry by me?

3 And I wrote this same unto you, lest when I came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoyce, having confidence in you all, that my joy is the joy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguish of heart, I wrote unto you with many tears, not that ye should be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

II. CORINTHIANS.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part; that I may not overcharge you all.

*Cor. in
the sight.* 6 Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which was inflicted of many.

7 So that contrariwise ye ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one should be swallowed up with overmuch sorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that you would confirm your love towards him.

9 For to this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

*Cor. in
the sight.* 10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive also: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your sakes forgave I it, in the person of Christ.

11 Lest Satan should get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christ's gospel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord.

13 I had no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother, but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the labour of his knowledge by us in every place.

15 For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish.

16 To the one we are the savour of death unto death; and to the other the savour of life unto life: and who is sufficient for these things?

*Cor. deal
deceitful-
ly w. h.* 17 For we are not as many which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ.

CHAP. III.

1 The commendation of Paul's ministry. 6 A comparison between the ministers of the law and gospel.

DO we begin again to commend our selves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you?

CHAP. III.

2 Ye are our epistle written in our hearts,
known and read of all men.

3 Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to
be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not
with ink, but with the spirit of the living God, not
in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart.

4 And such trust have we through Christ to
Godward:

5 Not that we are sufficient of our selves to
think any thing as of our selves: but our suffici-
ency is of God;

6 Who also hath made us able ministers of the
new testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit: ¶ Or, quick-
neth for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.

7 But if the ministration of death, written, and
engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the chil-
dren of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of
Moses for the glory of his countenance, which glory
was to be done away.

8 How shall not the ministration of the Spirit
be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation be
glory, much more both the ministration of righte-
ousnesse exceed in glory,

10 For even that which was made glorious, had
no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that
excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away, was glorious,
much more that which remaineth is glorious.

12 Seeing then that we have such hope, we use
great plainnesse of speech.

13 And not as Moses, which put a vail over his ¶ Or, boldnes,
face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly
look to the end of that which is abolished;

14 But there mindes were blinded: for untill
this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in
the reading of the old testament: which vail is done
away in Christ.

15 But even unto this day when Moses is read,
the vail is upon their heart.

16 Nevertheless, when it shall turn to the Lord,
the vail shall be taken away.

II. CORINTHIANS.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glasse the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image, from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

For, of
the Lord
the Spi-
rit.

CHAP. IIII.

1 Pauls sincerity, and diligence in preaching,
2 and of his troubles for the same.

Therefore seeing we have this ministry, as we have receiued mercy, we faint not:

For,
shame.

2 But have renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftinesse, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifestation of the truth, commending our selves to every mans conscience, in the sight of God.

3 But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost;

4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the mindes of them which beleue not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine into them.

5 For we preach not our selves, but Christ Jesus the Lord, & our selves your servants for Jesus sake.

6 For God who hath commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

8 We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair;

For, not
altoge-
ther
without
help or
means.

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed.

10 Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

11 For we which live, are alway delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortall flesh.

12 So, then death worketh in us, but life in you.

CHAP. V.

13 We having the same spirit of faith, according as it is written, * I beleebed, and therefore have * psal. 116.10.
I spoken : we also beleebe, and therefore speak :

14 Knowing that he which raised up the Lord Jesus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might, through the thanksgiving of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory ;

18 While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen : for the things which are seen, are temporal, but the things which are not seen, are eternal.

CHAP. V.

1 That in hope of immortal glory, and in expectation of it, and of the general judgement, he labor:th to keep a good conscience.

For we know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hand, eternal in the heavens.

2 For in this we groan earnestly, desiring to be clothed upon with our house, which is from heaven:

3 If so be that being clothed, we shall not be found naked.

4 For we that are in this tabernacle, do groan, being burdened, not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us for the self same thing, is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are alwayes confident, knowing that whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord.

7 (For we walk by faith, not by sight.)

II. CORINTHIANS.

8 We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

27. en-
deavor,

9 Wherefore we will labor, that whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him.

10 For we must all appear before the judgement seat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are made manifest unto God, and I trust also, are made manifest in your consciences.

† Gr. in
the face,

12 For we commend not our selves again unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf, that you may have somewhat to answer them, which glory in appearance, and not in heart.

13 For whether we be besides our selves, it is to God: or whether we be sober, it is for your cause.

14 For the love of Christ constraineth us, because we thus judge: that if one died for all, then were all dead.

15 And that he died for all, that they which live, should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.

Or let
him be.
* Isaiah.
43. 10.
Revel.
21. 1.

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: * old things are past away, behold, all things are become new.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation,

† Gr. pat
in us,

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them, and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christs stead, be ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew

C H A P. VI.

knew no sin, that we might be made, the righteousness of God in him.

C H A P. VI.

1 Pauls faithfulness in the ministry. 14 Exhortations to avoid idolaters.

WE then as workers together with him, beseech you also, that ye receive not the grace of God in vain :

2 (For he saith, * I have heard thee in a time * I have accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee : behold, now is the accepted time, behold, now is the day of salvation.)

3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed :

4 But in all things † approving our selves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, † in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings,

6 By pureness, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindness, by the holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness, on the right hand and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report, as deceivers, and yet true :

9 As unknown, and yet well known : as dying, and behold, we live : as chastened, and not killed :

10 As sorrowfull, yet alway rejoicing : as poor, yet making many rich : as having nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own bowels.

13 Now for a recompence in the same (I speak as unto my children) be ye also enlarged.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers : for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness ? and what communion hath light with darkness ?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial ?

II. CORINTHIANS.

or what part hath he that belongeth with an inside

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God, as God hath said, * I will dwell in them, and walk in them, and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

17 * Therefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing, and I will receive you.

18 * And will be a father unto you, and ye shall be my sons & daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

CHAP. VII.

1 He exhorteth to purity, 3 and declareth what comfort he took in his afflictions.

HAVING therefore these promises (dearly beloved) let us cleanse our selves from all filthynesse of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2 Receive us, we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 I speak not this to condemn you: for I have said before, that you are in our hearts to die and live with you.

4 Great is my boldnesse of speech toward you, great is my glopping of you. I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding ioyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side: without were fightings, within were fears.

6 Nevertheless, God that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us by the coming of Titus.

7 And not by his coming onely, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent minde toward me, so that I rejoyced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the same epistle hath made you sorry, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I rejoyce, not that ye were made sorry, but

* Levit.
26.12.

* Isaiah
58.11.

* Jerem.
31.1.

CHAP. VIII.

but that ye sorrowed to repentance: for ye were made sorry // after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing 10. ac. cording to God.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of; but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, this self same thing that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of your selves, yea, what indignation, yea, what fear, yea, what vehement desire, yea, what zeal, yea, what revenge: in all things ye have approved your selves to be clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote unto you, I did it not for his cause that hath done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear unto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort, yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting which I made before Titus, is found a truth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembreth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling you received him. 16. bowels.

16 I rejoyce therefore that I have confidence in you in all things.

CHAP. VIII.

1 He stirreth them up to contribute to the saints.
26 and commendeth Titus and others that were come to them purposely for this business.

Moreover, brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia,

2 How that in a great trial of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, abounded unto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to their power (I bear record) yea, and beyond their power, they were willing of themselves:

4 Praying

II. CORINTHIANS.

4 Praying us with much intreaty, that we would receive the gift, and take upon us the fellowship of the ministering to the saints.

5 And this they did, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God.

6 Inasmuch that we desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same grace also.

7 Therefore (as ye abound in every thing, in faith, and utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us) see that ye abound in this grace also.

8 I speak not by commandment, but by occasion of the forwardnesse of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.

10 And herein I give my advice, for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be [†]forward a year ago.

† Gr.
willing.

11 Now therefore perform the doing of it, that as there was a readinesse to will, so there may be a performance also out of that which you have.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is accepted according to that a man hath, and not according to that he hath not.

13 For I mean not that other men be eased, and you hurtened:

14 But by an equality: that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may be a supply for your want, that there may be equality.

15 As it is written, * He that had gathered much, had nothing over, and he that had gathered little had no lack.

* Exod.
16. 18.

16 But thanks be to God; which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed, he accepted the exhortation, but being more forward of his own accord he went unto you.

18 And

CHAP. IX.

18 And we have sent with him the brother, whose praise is in the gospel, throughout all the churches.

19 And not that only, but who was also chosen of the churches to travel with us with this grace, 12. gift. which is administered by us to the glory of the same Lord, and declaration of your ready minde.

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is administered by us.

21 Providing honest things, not onely in the sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

22 And we have sent with them our brother, whom we have often times proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent upon the great confidence which 12. he hath. I have in you.

23 Whether any do enquire of Titus, he is my partner and fellow-helper concerning you: or our brethren be enquired of, they are the messengers of the churches, and the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

CHAP. IX.

1 He sheweth why he sent Titus, and stirreth them to a bountifull alms, to which shall yeeld them a greater increase.

For as touching the ministring to the saints, it is superfluous for me to write to you.

2 For I know the forwardnesse of your minde, for which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that Achaia was ready a yeer ago, and your zeal hath provoked very many.

3 Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting of you should be in vain this behalf, that, as I said, ye may be ready.

4 Lest haply if they of Macedonia come with me, and finde you unprepared, we (that we say not you) should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

5 Therefore I thought it necessarie to exhort the brethren, that they would go before unto you, and make up before hand your bounty, 16. which hath been so much spoken of before. whereof ye had notice before, that the same might be ready as a

matter

II. CORINTHIANS.

a matter of bounty, not of covetousnesse.

6 But this I say, He which soweth sparingly, shall reap sparingly: and he which soweth bountifully, shall reap bountifully.

* Prov.

11. 25.

Rem.

12. 8.

Ecclus.

31. 9.

* Psal.

112. 9.

7 Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give, not grudgingly, or of necessity: for * God loveth a cheerful giver.

8 And God is able to make all grace abound towards you, that ye alwayes having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work,

9 (As it is written, * He hath dispersed abroad: he hath given to the poor: his righteousness remaineth for ever.

* Isai.

55. 10.

10 Now he that * minisreth seed to the sower, both minisreth bread for your food, and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness.)

11 Being enriched in every thing to all bountifullnesse, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God.

12 For the administration of this service, not onely supplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God,

13 Whiles by the experiment of this ministration, they glorifie God for your professed subjection unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them, and unto all men:

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after you, for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

CHAP. X.

1 Pauls spiritual might and authority against all adversaries, as well when he is present, as absent. 12 Not to teach beyond our compass.

For, in
outward
appear-
ance,

NOW I Paul my self beseech you by the meeknesse and gentlenesse of Christ, who in presence am base among you, but being absent, am bold toward you:

for,
person.

2 But I beseech you, that I may not be bold when I am present, with that confidence wherewith I think to be bold against some, which I think of

C H A P. X.

us as if we walked according to the flesh.

3 For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh:

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnall, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds.)

*12r. to
God.
12r. rea-
sonings.*

5 Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth it self against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ:

6 And having in a readinesse to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? If any man trust to himself, that he is Christ, let him of himself think this again, that as he is Christ, even so are we Christ.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority (which the Lord hath given us for edification, and not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seem as if I would terrifie you by letters.

10 For his letters (say they) are weighty and powerful, but his bodily presence is weak, and his speech contemptible.

11 Let such an one think this, that such as we are in word by letters, when we are absent, such will we be also in deed, when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selves of the number, or compare our selves with some that commend themselves: but they measuring themselves by themselves, and comparing themselves amongst themselves, are not wise.

*12r. un-
derstand
it not.
12r. line.*

13 But we will not boast of things without our measure, but according to the measure of the rule, which God hath distributed to us, a measure to reach even unto you.

14 For we stretch not our selves beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you. for we are so ne as far as to you also, in preaching the gospel of Christ:

15 Not boasting of things without our measure,
that

II CORINTHIANS

107,
magnifi-
ed in
you.
107, rule.

* Jer. 9.
24.
1 Cor. 1.
31.

that is, of other mens labours, but having hope when your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you, according to our rule abundantly,

16 To preach the gospel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast in another mans things made ready to our hand.

17 * But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

18 For, not he that commendeth himself is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

CHAP. XI.

1 Paul being enforced, entreth into commendation of himself, 5 and comparison with the other apostles.

107, you
do bear
with me

Would to God you could bear with me a little in my folly, and indeed I bear with me.

2 For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy, for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I fear lest by any means as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ.

4 For if he that cometh, preacheth an other Jesus whom we have not preached, or if he receive another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gospel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with him.

5 For I suppose, I was not a whit behind the very chiefest apostles.

6 But though I be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge: but we have been thoroughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Have I committed an offence in abasing myself that you might be exalted, because I have preached to you the gospel of God freely?

8 I robbed other churches, taking wages of them to do you service,

9 And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man: for that which was lacking to me, the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied, and in all things I have kept

C H A P. XI.

my self from being burthenſom to you, and ſo will I keep my ſelf.

10 As the truth of Chriſt is in me, no man ſhall ſtop me of this boaſting in the regions of Achaia. + G^r this
boasting
ſhall not
be ſtopped
in me,

11 Wherefoze? becauſe I love you not? God knoweth.

12 But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occaſion from them who deſire occaſion, that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we.

13 For ſuch are falſe apoſtles, deceitful workers, transforming themſelves into the apoſtles of Chriſt.

14 And no marvel, for Satan himſelf is transformed into an angel of light.

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his miniſters alſo be transformed as the miniſters of righteousneſſe, whoſe end ſhall be according to their works.

16 I ſay again, Let no man think me a fool; if otherwiſe, yet as a fool I receive me, that I may bo,
boast my ſelf a little. ſuffer,

17 That which I ſpeak I ſpeak it not after the Lord, but as it were fooliſhly in this confidence of boaſting.

18 Seeing that many glory after the fleſh, I will glory alſo.

19 For ye ſuffer fools gladly, ſeeing ye your ſelves are wiſe.

20 For ye ſuffer if a man bring you into bondage, if a man devour you, if a man take of you, if a man exalt himſelf, if a man ſmite you on the face.

21 I ſpeak as concerning reproach, as though we had been weak: howbeit, whereinſoever any is bold, I ſpeak fooliſhly, I am bold alſo.

22 Are they Hebrews? ſo am I: are they Iſraelites? ſo am I: are they the ſeed of Abraham? ſo am I:

23 Are they miniſters of Chriſt? I ſpeak as a fool, I am more, in labours more abundant: in ſtripes above meaſure: in priſons more frequent: in deaths oft.

24 Of the Jews five times received I ⁴⁰ ſourty ^{beats} ſtripes ſave one. 233

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I ſtoned

II. CORINTHIANS.

I stoned: thrice I suffered shipwreck: a night and a day I have been in the deep.

26 In journeying often, in perils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils by mine own countrymen, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the city, in perils in the wilderness, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren.

27 In weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness.

28 Besides those things that are without, the which cometh upon me daily, the care of all the churches.

29 Who is weak, and I am not weak? who is offended, and I burn not?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damascus the governor under Aretas the king, kept the city with a garison, desirous to apprehend me:

33 And through a window in a basket was I let down by the wall, and escaped his hands.

CHAP. XII.

1 He commendeth his apostleship, not by his revelations, 9 but by his infirmities: 11 blaming them for forcing him to this boasting.

It is not expedient for me doubtlesse to glory, I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, whether in the body, I cannot tell, or whether out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth: such one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth.)

4 Now that he was caught up into paradise, he heard unspeakable words, which is not lawful for a man to utter.

5 Of such an one will I glory, yet of myself I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

10r.
possible.

CHAP. XII.

6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a fool: for I will say the truth. But now I forbear, lest any man should think of me above that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of me.

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a ^{*}thorn in the flesh, the messenger of ^{See} Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above ^{Ezek.} measure. 32. 34.

8 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And he said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christs sake: for when I am weak, then am I strong.

11 I am become a fool in glorying, ye have compelled me. For I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the signes of an apostle were wrought among you, in all patience, in signes and wonders, and mighty deeds.

13 For what is it wherein ye were inferior to other churches, except it be that I my self was not burthensome to you? forgive me this wrong.

14 Behold the third time I am ready to come to you, and I will not be burthensome to you; for I lack not yours, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will very gladly spend, and be spent, ^{1 Cor. you & souls} for you: though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved.

16 But be it so: I did not burthen you: neverthelesse: being crafty I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make again of you by any of them whom I sent unto you?

II. CORINTHIANS.

18 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother: did Titus make a gain of you? walked we in the same spirit? walked we not in the same steps?

19 Again, think you that we excuse our letters unto you: we speak before God in Christ: but we are all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear, lest when I come, I shall finde you such as I would, and that I shall be forced unto you such as ye would not, lest there be debates, enuyings, wrathes, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults.

21 And lest when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewail many which have sinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanness, and fornication, and lasciviousness, which they have committed.

CHAP. XIII.

1 He threatneth obstinate sinners. 5 He advised them to a trial of their faith, 7 and reformation of their sins.

This is the third time I am coming to you: in the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be established.

2 I told you before, and forget you as if I were present the second time, and being absent, now I write to them which heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that if I come again, I will not spare:

3 Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified through weakness, yet he liveth by the power of God: for we also are weak in him; but we shall live with him by the power of God toward you.

5 Examine your selves, whether ye be in the faith: prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I trust that ye shall know that we are not reprobates.

7 Now I pray to God, that ye do no evil, not that we should appear approved, but that ye should

107,
with
him.

C H A P. I.

should do that which is honest, though we be as repro-
bates.

8 For we can do nothing against the truth, but
for the truth.

9 For we are glad when we are weak, and ye
are strong: and this also we wish, even your per-
fection.

10 Therefore I write these things being absent,
being present, I should use sharpnesse, accord-
ing to the power which the Lord hath given me to
edification, and not to destruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell: Be perfect, be
of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace, and
the God of love and peace shall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kisse.

13 All the salutes salute you.

14 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the
love of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost,
be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second epistle to the Corinthians, was
written from Philippios a city of Macedo-
nia, by Titus and Lucas.

THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE apostle to the GALATIANS.

C H A P. I.

6 He wondereth that they have so soon left him
and the gospel, 11 which he learned not of
men, but of God.

Paul an apostle, not of men, neither
by man, but by Jesus Christ, and
God the Father, who raised him
from the dead:

2 And all the brethren which
are with me, unto the churches of
Galatia.

3 Grace be to you and peace, from God the Fa-
ther, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

4 Who gave himself for our sins, that he
might deliver us from this present evil world,
according

TO THE GALATIANS.

according to the will of God, and our Father.

5 To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

6 I marvel that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel:

7 Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you, and would pervert the gospel of Christ.

8 But though we, or an angel from heaven preach any other gospel unto you, then that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you, then that ye have received, let him be accursed.

10 For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

11 But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me, is not after man.

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

13 For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews religion, how that beyond measure I persecuted the church of God, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the Jews religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

15 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers womb, & called me by his grace,

16 To reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen, immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood:

17 Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which were apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.

18 Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter, & abode with him fifteen days.

19 But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lords brother.

20 Now the things which I write unto you, behold, before God I lie not.

21 Afterwards I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia.

16r.
equals in
years.

10r. re-
turn.

C H A P. II.

22 And was unknown by face unto the churches of Judaea, which were in Christ.

23 But they had heard only, that he which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith, which once he destroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

C H A P. III.

1 He sheweth when he went again to Jerusalem, and why. 14 Of justification by faith, and not by works. 20 They that are justified live not in sin.

Then fourteen years after, I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel, which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reparation, lest by any means I should run, or have run in vain. 13. severally.

3 But neither Titus who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised.

4 And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to take out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage.

5 To whom we gave place by subjection, no not for an hour, that the truth of the gospel might continue with you.

6 But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me, God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed to be somewhat, in conference added nothing to me.

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter:

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter, to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles)

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we should go unto the

TO THE GALATIANS.

the heathen, and they unto the circumcision.

10 O woe they would that we should remember the peece, the same which I also was forward to do.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said unto Peter before them all, If thou being a Jew livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as the Jews: why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ: even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

17 But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we our selves also are found sinners: is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the things which I have destroyed, I make my self a transgressor.

19 For I through the law, am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Nevertheless I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me, and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me.

21 I do not frustrate the grace of God, for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

CHAP. III.

1 He asketh what moved them to leave the faith, and hang upon the law 6 They that beleeve are justified, y and blessed with Abraham.

O Foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you?

2 This onely would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?

4 Have ye suffered || so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain.

5 He therefore that ministrerh to you the Spirit, ^{|| Or, so great} and worketh miracles among you, doth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

6 Even as Abraham beleeveth God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. ^{|| Or, imputed.}

8 And the scripture foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, * In thee shall all nations be blessed. ^{* Gen. 12.3.}

9 So then, they which be of faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the law, are under the curse: for it is written, * Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law, to do them. ^{* Deut. 27.26.}

11 But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for * the just shall live by faith; ^{* Hab. 2.4. Rom. 1. 17.}

12 And the law is not of faith: but * the man that doth them, shall live in them. ^{* Levit. 18.5.}

13 Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, * Cursed is every one that hangeth on tree: ^{* Deut. 21.23.}

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ: that we might

TO THE GALATIANS.

might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

10r Te-
nament.

15 Brethren, I speak after the manner of men : though it be but a mans covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulterh, or addeth thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many, but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the Law which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise : but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then serveth the law ? it was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come, to whom the promise was made, and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.

20 Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one.

21 Is the law then against the promises of God ? God forbid : for if there had been a law given, which could have given life ; verily righteousness should have been by the law.

22 But the scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

23 But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith, which should afterwards be revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

26 For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus.

27 For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor

C H A P. IIII.

nor female : for ye are all one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if ye be Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heirs according to the promise.

C H A P. IIII.

1 We were under the Law till Christ came 5 But Christ freed us 12 We are the sons of Abraham by the free woman.

NOW I say, that the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be Lord of all,

2 But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the Father.

3 Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world :

4 But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,

Or, redimimus,

5 To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

7 Therefore thou art no more a servant, but a son ; and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye know not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no Gods.

9 But now after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggerly elements, wherunto ye desire again to be in bondage ?

*Or, back
Or, redimimus,*

10 Ye observe dayes, and moneths, and times, and years.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am : for I am as ye are, ye have not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmity of the flesh, I preached the gospel unto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in my flesh, ye despised not, nor rejected, but received me as an angel of God, even as Christ Iesus.

TO THE GALATIANS.

15 *Or, what was the an.* **||** Where is then the blessedness you spoke of for I bear you record, that if it had been possible, I would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, because I tell you the truth?

17 *Or, us.* They zealously affect you, but not well; yea, they would exclude you, that you might affect them.

18 But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good thing, and not only when I am present with you.

19 *Or, I am perplexed for you.* My little children, of whom I travel in birth again, until Christ be formed in you:

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to change my voice, for **||** I stand in doubt of you:

21 Tell me y^e that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.

23 But he who was of the bond-woman, was born after the flesh; but he of the free-woman, was by promise.

24 *Or, testaments.* Which things are an allegory; for these are the two **||** covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

25 *Or, in the same rank with.* For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and **||** answereth to Jerusalem, which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

26 But Jerusalem which is above, is free, which is the mother of us all.

27 *Or, Isaiah 54.1.* For it is written, * Rejoyce thou barren that bearest not, break forth and cry, thou that travailest not: for the desolate hath many more children than she which hath an husband.

28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the children of promise.

29 But as then he that was born after the flesh, persecuted him that was born after the Spirit, even so it is now.

30 *Or, Gen. 21.10.* Nevertheless, what saith the Lord, turne? * Cast out the bond-woman and her son: for the son

CHAP. VI.

son of the bond woman shall not be heir with the son of the free woman.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bond woman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

1 He moveth them to stand in their liberty, 3 and not to observe circumcision: 13 but rather love. 19 The works of the flesh. 22 The fruits of the spirit.

STand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtour to do the whole law.

4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the law, ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith.

6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but faith which worketh by love.

7 Ye did run well; || who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truth?

He who did drive you out.

8 This persuasion cometh not of him that calleth you.

9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded, but he that troubleth you, shall bear his judgement, whosoever he be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution? then is the essence of the crosse ceased.

12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.

13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty, only use not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one another.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, even

TO THE GALATIANS

* Levit.
19. 18.
Matth.
22. 39.
80r. ful
fil not.

in this: * Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy self.

15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed ye be not consumed one of another.

16 This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

19 Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness,

20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Envyings, murders, drunkenness, rebellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith,

23 Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law.

24 And they that are Christs, have crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts.

25 If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit.

26 Let us not be desirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

CHAP. VI.

1 He moveth them to deal mildly with a brother that slipperth. 6 To be liberal to their teachers, 9 and not to be weary of well doing.

10r. al-
though.

Brethren, If a man be overtaken in a fault: ye which are spiritmall, restore such an one in the Spirit of meekness, considering thy self, lest thou also be tempted.

2 Bear ye one anothers burthens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.

3 For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.

4 But

CHAP VI.

4 But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoycing in himself alone, and not in another.

5 For every man shall bear his own burthen.

6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.

7 Be not deceived, God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the spirit, shall of the spirit reap life everlasting.

9 And let us not be weary in well doing, for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

10 As we have therefore opportunitie, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.

11 Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with mine own hand.

12 As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised: onely lest they should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ.

13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised, keep the law, but desire to have you circumcised that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I should glory, save in the crosse of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom I or the world is crucified unto me, & I unto the world. whereby.

15 For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me, for I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit, Amen.

¶ Unto the Galatians written from Rome,



¶ THE EPISTLE OF PAUL
the apostle to the EPHESIANS.
CHAP. I.

Of our election, 6 and adoption, 11 which is
the foundation of our salvation.



Paul an Apostle of Jesus Christ by
the will of God, to the saints which
are at Ephesus, and to the faithful
in Christ Jesus :

2 Grace be to you, and peace
from God our Father, and from the
Lord Jesus Christ.

10r.
things.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord
Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritu-
all blessings in heavenly places in Christ :

4 According as he hath chosen us in him before
the foundation of the world, that we should be holy,
and without blame before him in love :

5 Having predestinated us unto the adoption of
children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to
the good pleasure of his will :

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace where-
in he hath made us accepted in the beloved :

7 In whom we have redemption through his
blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches
of his grace,

8 Wherein he hath abounded toward us in all
wisdom and prudence :

9 Having made known unto us the mystery of
his will, according to his good pleasure, which he
had purposed in himself,

10 That in the dispensation of the fulness of
times, he might gather together in one all things
in Christ, both which are in heaven, and which are
on earth, even in him :

† Gr. the
heavens.

11 In whom also we have obtained an inheri-
tance, being predestinated according to the purpose
of him, who worketh all things after the counsell of
his own will :

10r.
hoped,

12 That we should be to the praise of his glory,
who first trusted in Christ.

CHAP. II.

13 In whom ye also trusted after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise,

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints,

16 Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:

18 The eyes of your understanding being enlightened: that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints:

19 And what is the exceeding greatnesse of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power:

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places,

21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come:

22 And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church,

23 Which is his body, the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

1 What we were, 3 by nature, and what we are
5 by grace. 10 We are created unto good works.

AND you hath he quickned, who were dead in trespasses and sins.

2 Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of

TO THE EPHESIANS.

the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.

3 Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others:

4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5 Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved)

6 And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus:

7 That in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in his kindness towards us, through Christ Jesus.

8 For by grace are ye saved, through faith, and that not of your selves: it is the gift of God:

9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them,

11 Wherefore remember that ye being in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called uncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands.

12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the common-wealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world.

13 But now in Christ Jesus, ye who sometimes were far off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us:

15 Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances, for to make in himself of twain one new man, making peace.

16 And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body, by the crosse, having slain the enmity thereby:

17 And came, and preached peace to you, which were

C H A P. I I I.

were afar off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him we both have an access by one Spirit unto the Father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more strangers and sojourners, but fellow citizens with the saints and of the household of God ;

20 And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone,

21 In whom all the building fitly framed together, groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord :

22 In whom you also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit.

C H A P. I I I.

5 The hidden mystery, 6 that the Gentiles should be saved. 9 This was Paul to preach.

For this cause I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for you Gentiles,

2 If ye have heard of the dispensation of the grace of God, which is given me to you-ward :

3 Now that by revelation he made known unto me the mystery, (as I wrote afore in few words, Or, little before

4 Whereby when ye read, ye may understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ.)

5 Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the Spirit,

6 That the Gentiles should be fellow heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ by the gospel :

7 Whereof I was made a minister, according to the gift of the grace of God given unto me, by the effectuall working of his power.

8 Unto me, who am lesse then the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ,

9 And to make all men see, what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ :

10 To the intent that now unto the principalities,

TO THE EPHESIANS.

ties and powers in heavenly places, might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God.

11 According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord:

12 In whom we have boldnesse and access, with confidence, by the faith of him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,

15 Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named,

16 That he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might, by his Spirit in the inner man.

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith, that ye being rooted and grounded in love,

18 May be able to comprehend with all saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth & height:

19 And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulnesse of God.

20 Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us,

21 Unto him be glory in the church by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end. Amen.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to unity, 14 to put on the new man, 15 to cast off lying, 29 and corrupt communication.

10r. In
the Lord.

I Therefore the prisoner || of the Lord, beseech you, that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

2 With all lowlinesse, and meeknesse, with long-suffering, forbearing one another in love:

3 Endeavouring to keep the unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace.

4 There is one body, and one spirit, when as ye are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one faith, one baptism,

6 One

CHAP. III.

6 One God and Father of all, who is above all, and above all, and in you all.

7 But unto every one of us is given grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Therefore he saith, * When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men.

* Phil.
48.13.
1 Or: a
multi-
tude of
captive!

9 (Now that he ascended, what is it, but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things)

1 Or.
fulfill.

11 * And he gave some Apostles: and some prophets: and some, evangelists: and some, pastors, and teachers;

* 1 Cor.
12.28.

12 For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the measure of the stature of the fulnesse of Christ:

1 Or, into
the unity
1 Or, age,

14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftinesse whereby they lie in wait to deceive:

1 Or,
being
sincere.

15 But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ:

16 * From whom the whole body fitly joyned together, and compacted, by that which every joyn supplieth, according to the effectuall working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of it self in love.

* Col.
2.19.

17 This I say therefore, testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanitie of their minde,

18 Having the understanding darkned, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart:

* Rom.
2.21.
1 Or,
hardness

19 Who being past feeling, having given themselves over unto lasciviousnesse, to work all uncleanness with greedinesse.

TO THE EPHESIANS.

20 But ye have not so learned Christ:

21 If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus.

22 That ye put off concerning the former conversation, the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitfull lusts:

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde:

24 And that ye put on that new man, which after God is created in righteousness, and true holiness.

for holiness of truth.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be ye angry and sin not, let not the sun go down upon your wrath.

27 Neither give place to the devil.

28 Let him that stole, steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

for, to distribute.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good, & to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the hearers.

for, to edify profitably.

30 And grieve not the holy spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice.

* 2. Cor. 13. 10.

32 * And be ye kinde one to another, tender hearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christs sake hath forgiven you.

CHAP. V.

1 He exhorreth to love. 3 to flee fornication, 4 and all uncleanness. 5 to walk warily. 11 The duties of wives. 15 and of husbands.

BE ye therefore followers of Gods, as dear children.

2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling savour;

3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or

love.

C H A P. V.

covetousnesse, let it not be once named among you,
as becometh saints :

4 Neither filchinesse, nor foolish talking, nor
jesting, which are not convenient, but rather giving
of thanks.

5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor
unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idola-
ter, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of **Ch: B,**
and of **God.**

6 Let no man deceive you with vain words : for
because of these things cometh the wrath of **God** up-
on the children of **disobedience.**

7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them.

*[Gr. woi
belief.]*

8 For ye were sometimes darknesse, but now are
ye light in the **Lord** : walk as children of light,

9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all good-
nesse, and righteousnesse, and truth)

10 Proving what is acceptable unto the **Lord.**

11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful
works of darknesse, but rather reprove them.

12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things
which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are **reproved**, are made **manifest** by the light : For whatsoever doth make
manifest is light. *[Gr. dis-
covered.]*

14 Wherefore he saith, * Awake thou that sleep- * *Isaiah*
est, and arise from the dead, and **Christ** shall give *60.1.*
thee light.

15 * See then that ye walk circumspectly, not * *Colos.*
as fools but as wise, *4.5.*

16 Redeeming the time, because the dayes are
evil.

17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understand-
ing what the will of the **Lord** is.

18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is ex-
cesse : but be filled with the Spirit :

19 Speaking to your selves in psalms, and
hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making
melody in your heart to the **Lord.**

20 Giving thanks alwayes for all things unto
God, and the Father, in the Name of our **Lord**
Iesus Christ.

21 Submit-

TO THE EPHESIANS.

21 Submitting your selves one to another in the fear of God.

22 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the Saviour of the body.

24 Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.

25 Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;

26 That he might sanctifie, and cleanse it with the washing of water, by the word,

27 That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but that it should be holy and without blemish.

28 So ought men to love their wives, as their own bodies: he that loveth his wife loveth himself.

29 For no man yet ever hated his own flesh: but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

33 Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular, so love his wife even as himself, and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

CHAP. VI.

1 The duty of children, 5 of servants. 10 Our life is a warfare. 15 The Christians armour.

Children, obey your parents in the Lord; for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first commandment with promise)

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on the earth.

C H A P. VI

4 And ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath, but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ:

6 As with eye-service, as men pleasers, but as the servants of Christ doing the will of God from the heart:

7 With good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men:

8 Knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye masters do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening: knowing that your master also is in heaven, neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against all the wiles of the devil.

12 For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.

13 Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and having on the breast-plate of righteousness:

15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace.

16 Above all, taking the shield of faith, whereby ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit which is the word of God:

18 Praying alwayes with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance, and supplication for all saints.

19 And

*Or, considering.
Some read,
Both your and their master.*

*Or, wicked spirits.
Or, heavenly
Or, having over, come all.*

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

19 And so me, that utterance may be giben unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel:

For, in a
chain,
I sit,
thereof.

20 For which I am an ambassador || in bonds, that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

21 But that ye also may know my affairs, and how I do, Tyche our beloved brother, and faithful minister in the Lord, shall make known to you all things.

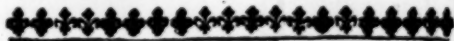
22 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and that ye might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace be to the brethren, and love, with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

For, with
incorrupti-
on,

24 Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ || in sincerity. Amen.

Written from Rome unto the Ephesians, by Tycheus.



The epistle of PAUL the apostle to the PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 Pauls thankfulness to God for them, 9 and his prayer for them. 13 The fruit of Pauls troubles. 21 His readinesse to suffer.



Paul and Timotheus the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus, which are at Philippi, with the bishops and deacons.

3 Grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, & from the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I thank my God upon every remembrance of you.

4 Alwayes in every prayer of mine for you all making request with joy.

CHAP. I.

5 For your fellowship in the gospel, from the first day until now;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you, will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ:

7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, because I have you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Jesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and in all judgment,

10 That ye may approve things that are excellent, that ye may be sincere and without offence till the day of Christ:

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God.

12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the things which happened unto me, have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the gospel.

13 So that my bonds in Christ are manifest in all the palace, and in all other places.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Christ, even of envy and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely supposing to add affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am set for the defence of the gospel.

18 What then? Notwithstanding every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Christ is preached: and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

19 For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through your prayer, and the supply of the spirit of Jesus Christ,

20 According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed: but that with

Or, will finish it.

Or, you have me in your heart

Or, partakers with me of grace.

Or, sense.

Or, i.e. Heb. differ.

Or, For Christ.

Or, Cæsars courts.

Or, to all others.

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

with all boldnesse, as alwayes, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.

21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain.

22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose, I wot not:

for,
glory.

23 For I am in a straight betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ which is far better.

24 Nevertheless, to abide in the flesh is more needful for you.

25 And having this confidence, I know that I shall abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and joy of faith.

26 That your rejoicing may be more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you again.

for,
evils.

27 Wherefore let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one spirit, with one mind, striving together for the faith of the gospel.

28 And in nothing terrified by your adversaries, which is to them an evident token of perdition: but to you, of salvation, and that of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not onely to believe on him, but also to suffer for his sake.

30 Having the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth to unity and humility, and to a careful proceeding in the way of salvation.

If there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels, and mercies;

2 Fulfill ye my joy, that ye be like minded, having the same love, being of one accord, of one mind.

3 Let nothing be done through strife, or vainglory, but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves.

4 Look not every man on his own things, but

CHAP. II.

every man also on the things of others.

5 Let this minde be in you, which was also in Christ Iesus.

6 Who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:

7 But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men.

¶ Or,
habit.

8 And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the crosse.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a Name which is above every name

10 That at the Name of Iesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth:

11 And that every tongue should confesse, that Iesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have alwayes obeyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to do, of his good pleasure.

14 Do all things without murmurings, and disputings:

15 That ye may be blamelesse, and harmless, the sons of God without rebuke, in the midst of a crooked & perverſe nation, among whom ye shine as lights in the world:

¶ Or,
ſincere.
¶ Or,
ſhine ſhe

16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may rejoyce in the day of Christ, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.

17 Yea, and if I be offered upon the ſacrifice and ſervice of your faith, I joy, and rejoyce with you all.

† Gr.
poured
forth.

18 For the ſame cauſe alſo do ye joy and rejoyce with me.

19 ¶ But I truſt in the Lord Ieſus to ſend Timothy ſhortly unto you, that I alſo may be of good comfort, when I know your ſtate.

¶ Or,
more-
over.

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

Or, so
dear un-
to me.

20 For I have no man like minded, who will naturally care for your state.

21 For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christs.

22 But ye know the proof of him, that as a son with the father, he hath served with me in the gospel.

23 Him therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see how it will go with me.

24 But I trust in the Lord, that I also myself shall come shortly.

25 Yet I supposed it necessary to send to you Epaphroditus my brother and companion in labour, and fellow-soldier, but your messenger, and he that ministered to my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he had been sick.

27 For indeed he was sick nigh unto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him only, but on me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when ye see him again ye may rejoice, and that I may be the less sorrowful.

Or,
honour
such.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladness, and hold such in reputation:

30 Because for the work of Christ he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life to supply your lack of service toward me.

CHAP. III.

1 He warneth them of false teachers. 15 He exhorteth them 17 to imitate him, 18 and to decline the wayes of carnal Christians.

Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous: but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also have confidence in the flesh

Act

CHAP. III.

5. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more.

6 Circumcised the eight day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews, as touching the law, a Pharisee:

7 Concerning zeal, persecuting the church: touching the righteousness which is in the law, blameless.

8 But what things were gain to me, those I counted losse for Christ.

9 Yea doubtlesse, and I count all things but losse, for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the losse of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ,

10 And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:

11 That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death.

12 If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead.

13 Not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

14 Brethren, I count not my self to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behinde, and reaching forth unto those things which are before,

15 I presse toward the mark, for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.

16 Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in any thing ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

17 Nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us minds the same thing.

18 Brethren be followers together of me, & mark them which walk so, as ye have us for an ensample.

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

18 (For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the crosse of Christ :

19 Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is their shame, who minde earthly thinge)

20 For our conuersation is in heauen, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Iesus Christ :

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself.

CHAP. IIII.

1 General exhortations: 10 His joy for their liberality toward him, and Gods grace in them.

Therefore, my brethren, dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and crown, so stand fast in the Lord, my dearly beloved.

2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be of the same minde in the Lord.

3 And I entreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, help those women which laboured with me in the gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in the book of life.

4 Rejoyce in the Lord alway: and again, I say, rejoyce.

5 Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Be carefull for nothing: but in every thing by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and mindes through Christ Iesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, ^{or, vñ} ^{amable,} whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report: if there be any vertue, and if there be any praise, think on these things:

9 Those

C H A P. II II.

9 Those things which ye have both learned and received, and heard and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I rejoyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me || hath flourished again, wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

*He
is re-
ceiv-
ed.*

11 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, therewith to be content.

12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full, and to be hungry, both to abound, and to suffer need.

13 I can do all things through Christ, which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now, ye Philippians, know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me, as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only.

16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But || I have all, and abound. I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things which ye sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, well pleasing to God.

*He
I have
received
all.*

19 But my God shall supply all your need, according to his riches, in glory by Christ Jesus.

20 Now unto God and our Father be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus: the brethren which are with me greet you.

22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cæsars household.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

C It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by Epaphroditus,



The epistle of PAUL the apostle to the
COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

3 He thanketh God for their faith, 9 prayeth for their increase of grace: 14 and describeth the true Christ unto them.



Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, and Timotheus our brother.

2 To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace be unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We give thanks to God, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, praying alwayes for you.

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love which ye have to all the saints;

5 For the hope which is laid up for you, in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the gospel,

6 Which is come unto you, as it is in all the world, and bringeth forth fruit, as it doth also in you since the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in truth,

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellowservant, who is for you a faithful minister of Christ:

8 Who also declared unto us your love in the Spirit.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisdom and spiritual understanding:

10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God:

11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness:

12 Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath

C H A P. I.

made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light.

13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darknesse, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son,

† Or,
the son
of his
love.

14 In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins :

15 Who is the image of the invisible God, the first-born of every creature.

16 For by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible, and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers : all things were created by him, and for him.

17 * And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

* 1 Cor.
8. 6.
John 1. 3

18 And he is the head of the body, the Church : who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead, that in all things he might have the preeminence :

† Or, at
mong all

19 For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulnesse dwell,

20 And (having made peace through the blood of his crosse) by him to reconcile all things unto himself, by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven.

† Or,
making
peace.

21 And you that were sometimes alienated, and enemies // in your minde by wicked workes, yet now have been reconciled,

† Or,
by your
minde in
wicked
workes.

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable, and unreproueable in his sight,

23 If he continue in the faith, grounded and settled, and be not moved away from the hope of the gospel which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature which is under heaven, whereof I Paul am made a minister.

24 Who now rejoyce in my sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the church.

25 Whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is given to me

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

10r. fully
to preach
the word
of God.
Rom. 1.
19.

for you, || to fulfil the word of God :

26 Even the mystery which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest to his saints,

10r.
amongst
you.

27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystrie among the Gentiles, which is Christ || in you the hope of glory:

28 Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ Jesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to be constant in Christ, 8 to beware of philosophie and vain traditions, 18 worshipping of angels, 20 and legal ceremonies.

10r. fear,
or, care.

For I would that ye knew what great || conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh :

2 That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ.

10r.
wherein.

3 || In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words.

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the steadfastnesse of your faith in Christ.

6 As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him :

7 Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

10r.
elements.

8 Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophie and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the || rudiments of the world, and not after

C H A P. I I.

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the
Godhead bodily.

10 And ye are compleat in him, which is the
head of all principality and power.

11 In whom also ye are circumcised with the
circumcision made without hands, in putting off
the body of the sins of the flesh, by the circumcision
of Christ :

12 Buried with him in baptism, wherein also
you are risen with him through the faith of the ope-
ration of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your sins, and the un-
circumcision of your flesh hath be quickned together
with him, having forgiven you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances
that was against us, which was contrary to us, and
took it out of the way, nailing it to his crosse :

15 And having spoiled principalities and pow-
ers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing
over them || in it.

16 Let no man therefore judge you || in meat, or
in drink, or || in respect of a holy-day, or of the new
moon, or of the sabbath-dayes ;

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but
the body is Christ.

18 Let no man || beguile you of your reward, † in
a voluntary humilitie, and worshipping of angels,
intruding into those things which he hath not seen,
vainly puffed up by his fleshly minde :

19 And not holding the head, from which all the
body by joynts and bands, having nourishment mi-
nistred, and knit together, increaseth with the in-
crease of God.

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the
|| rudiments of the world : why, as though living in
the world, are ye subject to ordinances ?

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not :

22 Which all are to perish with the using) after
the commandments and doctrines of men :

23 Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in
will-worship and humilitie, and || neglecting of the
body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

|| Or. in
himself
|| Or. for
eating &
drinking
|| Or. in
part.

† Or. -
judge
against
y u.
† Or. be-
ing a vo-
luntary
in humi-
lity.

|| Or. ele-
ments

|| Or. pu-
nishing,
or, not
sparing

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. III.

1 He sheweth where we should seek Christ, & He exhorteth to mortification. 10 to put off the old man, and to put on Christ, 12 and to surdy other duries.

IF ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God :

for,
minde.

2 Set your affection on things aboue, not on things on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ who is our life shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are upon the earth : fornication, uncleannesse, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousnes, which is idolatry ;

6 For which things sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobedience.

7 In the which ye also walked sometime, when ye lived in them.

8 But now you also put off all these, anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds :

10 And have put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him.

11 Where there is neither Greek, nor Jew, circumcision, nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond, nor free : but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God, holy and beloved) bowels of mercies, kindness, humbleness of minde, meeknesse, long suffering,

for,
com-
plaint.

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel against any : even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye.

14 And aboue all these things, put on charity, which is the bond of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts,

CHAP. IIII.

to the which also ye are called in one body: and be ye thankful.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisdom, teaching and admonishing one another in psalms and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the Name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God, and the Father by him.

18 Wives, submit your selves unto your own husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, love your wives, and be not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things, for this is well pleasing unto the Lord.

21 Fathers, provoke not your children to anger, lest they be discouraged.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters according to the flesh: not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but in singleness of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatsoever ye do, do it heartily, as to the Lord, and not unto men:

24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for ye serve the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doth wrong, shall receive for the wrong which he hath done; and there is no respect of persons.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth to fervency of prayer, & to walk wisely toward them that do not yet know Christ.

Masters, give unto your servants that which is just and equal, knowing that ye also have a master in heaven.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving:

3 Withal, praying also for us, that God would open unto us a doore of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5 Walk in wisdom toward them that are with-

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

out, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech be alway with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how ye ought to answer every man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithfull minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord :

8 Whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that he might know your estate, & comfort your hearts:

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloved brother, who is one of you. They shall make known unto you all things which are done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus, sisters son to Barnabas, (touching whom ye received commandments; if he come unto you, receive him.)

11 And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These onely are my fellow-workers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me.

Dr. Ari-
ving.
Dr.
filled,

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a servant of Christ, saluteth you, alwayes labouring fervently for you in prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and compleat in all the will of God.

13 For I bear him record, that he hath a great zeal for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in Hierapolis.

14 Luke the beloved physician, and Demas greet you.

15 Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and Nymphas, & the church which is in his house.

16 And when this epistle is read amongst you, cause that it be read also in the church of the Laodiceans: and that ye likewise read the epistle from Laodicea.

17 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord, that thou fulfill it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace be with you. Amen.

Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Tychicus and Onesimus.

THE FIRST EPISTLE
of PAUL the apostle to the
THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

1 He sheweth his mindfullnesse of them in thanksgiving and prayer, 5 and his perswasion of their sincere conversion.

PAUL, and SYLVANUS, and TIMOTHEUS,
unto the church of the Thessaloni-
ans, which is in God the Father, and
in the Lord Jesus Christ: grace be
unto you, and peace from God our
Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 We giue thanks to God alwayes for you all,
making mention of you in our prayers,

3 Remembryng without ceasing your work of faith,
and labour of love, & patience of hope in our Lord
Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father:

4 Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of
God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word
onely, but also in power, and in the holy Ghost, and
in much assurance, as ye know what manner of men
we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the
Lord, having receiued the word in much affliction,
with joy of the holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that beleue
in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the
Lord, not onely in Macedonia and Achaia, but also
in every place your faith to God-ward is spread
abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselues shew of us, what manner of
entring in we had unto you, and how ye turned to
God from idols, to serue the liuing and true God.

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom
he raised from the dead, even Jesus which deli-
bered us from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

1 How the gospel was preached unto them, and
how

I. THESSALONIANS.

how they received it. 18 Why he was so long absent, and why he desired to see them.

For your selves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain.

2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the Gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the Gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloak of covetousness. God is witness.

10. used
authority.

6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others, when we might have been burdensome as the apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the Gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because ye were dear unto us.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labor and travail: for laboring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

10 Ye are witnesses, and God also how holily and justly, and unblameably we behaved our selves among you that believe.

11 As you know, how we exhorted, and comforted and charged every one of you, (as a father doth his children)

12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you into his kingdom, and glory.

13 For this cause also think we God without boasting, because when ye received the word of God, which ye heard of us, ye received it not as the word of men, but (as it is in truth) the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

C H A P. III.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews:

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us: and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

¶ Or, chased us out.

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles, that they might be saved, to fill up their sinnes alway: for the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time, in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you (even I Paul) once and again: but Satan hindered us.

¶ Or, glorying.

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of glorying? Are not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming?

20 For ye are our glory, and joy.

C H A P. III.

1 Of Paul sending of Timothy unto them. 7 His joy for them. 10 His desire to see them.

Wherefore when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone:

2 And sent Timotheus our brother and minister of God, and our fellow-labourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for your selves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before, that we should suffer tribulation, even as it came to passe, and ye know.

5 For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, & our labour be in vain.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you unto us, & brought us good tidings of your faith & charity: & that ye have good remembrance of us alwayes, desiring greatly to see us, as we also to see you:

7 Therefore, brethren, we were comforted over

you

I. THESSALONIANS.

* Rom.
707.

you in all your affliction and distresse, by your faith:

8 For now we * live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thanks can we render to God again for you, for all the joy wherewith we joy for your sakes before our God,

10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might perfect that which is lacking in your faith:

100.
guide.

11 Now God himself, and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, direct our way unto you.

12 And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one towards another, and towards all men, even as we do towards you:

13 To the end he may stablish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He exhorteth them to go on in godlinesse, 6 to holinesse, 9 to love, 11 to quietnesse, 13 to moderate sorrow for the dead. 17 Of the resurrection and last judgement.

100.
request.
100.
beseech.

Furthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how ye ought to walk, and to please God, so ye would abound more and more.

2 For ye know what commandments we gave you, by the Lord Jesus.

3 For this is the will of God, even your sanctification, that ye should abstain from fornication:

4 That every one of you should know how to possesse his vessel in sanctification and honour:

5 Not in the lust of concupiscence, even as the Gentiles, which know not God:

100.
op-
presse.
or over-
reach.
100.
in the
matter.

6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter, because that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have forewarned you, and testified:

7 For God hath not called us unto uncleannesse, but unto holinesse.

100.
re-
spect.

8 We therefore that despise, despise not man, but God, who hath also given unto us his holy Spirit,

9 But

C H A P. V.

9 But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write unto you: for ye your selves are taught of God to love one another.

10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren which are in all Macedonia: but we beseech you, brethren, that ye increase more and more:

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your own hands, (as we commanded you.)

12 That ye may walk honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may have lack of nothing.

13 But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.

14 For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again: even so them also which sleep in Jesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, That we which are alive, and remain unto the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are asleep.

16 For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first.

17 Then we which are alive, and remain, shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore, comfort one another with these words.

C H A P. V.

He sheweth of Christs second coming to judgement, 6 and giveth divers precepts, 13 and so concludeth.

BUT of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you.

2 For your selves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace and safety: then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travell upon a woman with childe, and they shall not escape

4 But

I. THESSALONIANS.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darknesse, that that day should overtake you as a thief.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darknesse.

6 Therefore let us not sleep, as do others, but let us watch, and be sober.

7 For they that sleep, sleep in the night, and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night:

8 But let us who are of the day be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and for an helmet the hope of salvation.

9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath: but to obtaine salvation by our Lord Iesus Christ,

10 Who died for us, that whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him.

¶ Or,
exhort.

11 Wherefore // comfort your selves together, and edifie one another, even as also ye do.

12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which laboꝝ among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admonish you:

13 And to esteem them very highly in love for their works sake, and be at peace among your selves.

¶ Or,
beseech.
¶ Or, dis-
orderly.

14 Now we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are // unruly, comfort the feeble minded, support the weak, be patient toward all men.

15 See that none render evil for evil unto any man: but ever follow that which is good, both among your selves, and to all men.

16 Rejoyce evermore:

17 Pray without ceasing:

18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Iesus concerning you.

19 Quench not the spirit:

20 Despise not prophesyings:

21 Prove all things: hold fast that which is good.

22 Abstain from all appearance of evil.

23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit, and soul, and body be preserved blamelesse unto the coming of our Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Faithful is he that calleth you, who also will do it.

25 Brethren.

C H A P. I.

25 Brethren pray for us.

26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kisse.

27 I charge you by the Lord, that this epistle ^{1 Cor. 16:1} be read unto all the holy brethren. ^{adju.}

28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you. Amen.

C The first epistle unto the Thessalonians, was written from Athens.

~~~~~

## THE SECOND EPISTLE of PAUL the apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

### C. H A P. I.

1 He sheweth his good opinion of their faith, love, and patience, and comforteth them against persecution.

**P**aul, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ:

2 Grace unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thank God alwayes for you, brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all towardes each other aboundeth:

4 So that we our selves glory in you in the churches of God, for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure:

5 Which is a manifest token of the righteous judgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which ye also suffer;

6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you:

7 And to you who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven, <sup>1 Cor. 13:1</sup> with his mighty angels, <sup>of his power.</sup>

8 In flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ. <sup>yeelding</sup>

9 Who

## II. THESSALONIANS.

9 Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power :

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

For,  
vouch-  
safe.

11 Therefore also we pray alwayes for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodnesse, and the work of faith with power :

12 That the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

### CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to continue stedfast,  
3 sheweth that there shall be a departure from the faith, 9 and discovery of Antichrist before the day of the Lord.

**N**ow we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

2 That ye be not soon shaken in minde, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

3 Let no man deceive you by any means, for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition.

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped : so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

For,  
holdeth.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things ?

6 And now ye know what I withholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time.

7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work : onely he who now letteth, will let, until he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth.

# CHAP. III.

and shall destroy with the brightnesse of his coming :

9 Even him whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power, and signs, and lying wonders,

10 And with all deceivablenesse of unrighteousnesse, in them that perish : because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should beleve a lie :

12 That they all might be damned, who beleved not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousnesse.

13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord ; because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of the Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle.

16 Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

# CHAP. III.

He craveth their prayer, 3 testifieth his confidence in them, 5 prayeth for them, 6 and giveth them divers precepts.

Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord <sup>†</sup> may have free course, and be glorified, even as it is with you :

<sup>†</sup>Gr. may run.

2 And that we may be delivered from <sup>†</sup> unreasonable and wicked men ; for all men have not faith.

<sup>†</sup>Gr. absurd.

3 But the Lord is faithful, who shall stablish you and keep you from evil.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye hath do, and will do the things which we command you.

5 And



## II. THESSALONIANS.

9 Who shall be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power :

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that believe (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

10.  
vouch-  
safe.

11 Wherefore also we pray alwayes for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the work of faith with power :

12 That the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

### CHAP. II.

1 He exhorteth them to continue stedfast, 3 sheweth that there shall be a departure from the faith, 9 and discovery of Antichrist before the day of the Lord.

**N**OW we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

2 That ye be not soon shaken in minde, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

3 Let no man deceive you by any means, for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition.

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped : so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, the knowing himself that he is God.

10.  
holdeth.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these things ?

6 And now ye know what I withholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time.

7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work : onely he who now letteth, will let, until he be taken out of the way.

8 And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth.

### CHAP. III.

and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming :

9 Even him whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power, and signs, and lying wonders,

10 And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness, in them that perish : because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.

11 And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie :

12 That they all might be damned, who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

13 But we are bound to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord ; because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of the Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epistle.

16 Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and God even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us everlasting consolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and stablish you in every good word and work.

### CHAP. III.

He craveth their prayer, 3 testifieth his confidence in them, 5 prayeth for them, 6 and giveth them divers precepts.

Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord <sup>† Gr.</sup> may run, <sup>may run.</sup> and be glorified, even as it is with you :

2 And that we may be delivered from <sup>† Gr.</sup> unreasonable and wicked men ; for all men have not faith, <sup>absurd,</sup>

3 But the Lord is faithful, who shall stablish you and keep you from evil.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do, and will do the things which he command you.

## II. THESSALONIANS.

For, the  
patience  
of Christ.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Christ.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye withdraw your selves from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he received of us.

7 For your selves know how ye ought to follow us: for we behaved not our selves disorderly among you.

8 Neither did we eat any mans bread for nought, but wrought with labour and travail night and day: that we might not be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we have not power, but to make our selves an example unto you to follow us.

10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

11 For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busi-bodies.

12 Now them that are such, we command, and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietnesse they work, and eat their own bread.

13 But ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing.

14 And if any man obey not our words, by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

15 Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himself, give you peace alwayes by all means. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

The second epistle to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

The

For,  
saint not  
For,  
signifie  
that man  
by an  
epistle.

The first epistle of P A U L the apostle to  
T I M O T H I E.

CHAP. I.

Pauls charge to Timothie. 5 The end of the  
Law. 11 Of Pauls calling. 20 Of Hymeneus  
and Alexander.

**P**aul an apostle of Iesus Christ, by  
the commandment of God our Sa-  
uour, and Lord Iesus Christ,  
which is our hope.

2 Unto Timothie my own son in  
the faith: Grace, mercy, and peace  
from God our Father, and Iesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus,  
when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest  
charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables, and endlesse gene-  
alogies, which minitter questions, rather than godly  
edifying, which is in faith: so do.

5 Now the end of the commandment is chari-  
ty out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and  
of faith unfeigned.

6 From which some having swerved, have turn-  
ed aside into vain jangling; 10r. not  
aiming  
at.

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law, under-  
standing neither what they say, nor whereof they  
affirm.

8 But we know that the law is good, if a man  
use it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the law is not made for  
righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient,  
for the ungodly, and for sinners, for unholy, and  
profane, for murderers of fathers, and murderers  
of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile them-  
selves with mankind, for men-stealers, for liars, for  
perjured persons, and if there be any other thing  
that is contrary to sound doctrine,

11 According to the glorious gospel of the bles-  
sed God, which was committed to my trust.

## I. TIMOTHIE.

12 And I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who hath enabled me: for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry.

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, & injurious. But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly, in unbelief.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant, with faith & love which is in Christ Jesus.

15 This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief.

16 Howbeit for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on him to life everlasting.

17 Now unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise God, be honour and glory, for ever and ever. Amen.

18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothie, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a good warfare,

19 Holding faith, and a good conscience, which some having put away, concerning faith have made shipwreck.

20 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

### CHAP. II.

1 It is meet to pray and give thanks for all men.

9 Womens attire, 12 they are not permitted to teach.

Desire.

**I** || Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thanks be made for all men:

Pre-emin-  
ent  
place,

2 For kings, and for all that are in authority, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour,

4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truth.

5 For

### CHAP. III.

5 For there is one God, and one Mediatour between God and men, the man Christ Iesus,

6 Who gave himself a ransom for all, to be justified in due time. for, a redemption.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an apostle, (I speak the truth in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity.

8 I will therefore that men pray every where, lifting up holy hands without wrath and doubting.

9 In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefastness and sobriety, not with  $\parallel$  broidered hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array, for, praised.

10 But (which becometh women professing godliness) with good works.

11 Let the woman learn in silence with all subjection:

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eve:

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression:

15 Notwithstanding, she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity, and godliness with sobriety.

### CHAP. III.

Of bishops and deacons, and their wives. 15 Of the church, and the truth therein taught and professed.

This is a true saying, if a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work.

2 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober,  $\parallel$  of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; for, modest.

3 Not  $\parallel$  given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous; for, not ready to quarrel

4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity: and offer wrong, as one in wine.

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?) for, one newly come to the faith.

6 Not a  $\parallel$  novice, lest being lifted up with pride, he fall into the condemnation of the devil.

7 More.

## I. TIMOTHIE.

7 Moreover, he must have a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into reproach, and the snare of the devil.

8 Likewise must the deacons be grave, not double tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre,

9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being found blameless.

11 Even so must their wives be grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their own houses well.

13 For they that have used the office of a deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith, which is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly.

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

16 And without controversy, great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

### CHAP. IIII.

1 That in the latter times there shall be a departure from the faith. 6 Paul giveth divers precepts to Timothy.

**N**ow the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils:

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience seared with a hot iron:

3 Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

## C H A P. V.

4 For every creature of God is good and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving :

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God, and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse profane and old wives fables, and exercise thy self rather unto godliness,

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little, but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise <sup>10. for</sup> of the life that now is, and of that which is to come. <sup>little</sup> time.

9 This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation :

10 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, especially of those that believe.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which has given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.

15 Meditate upon these things, give thy self wholly to them, that thy profiting may appear to all.

16 Take heed to thy self, and unto the doctrine : continue in them : for in doing this thou shalt both save thy self, and them that hear thee.

## C H A P. V.

1 Rules to be observed in reprovng. 3 Of Widows. 17 Of elders.

**R**evoke not an elder, but intreat him as a father, and the younger men as brethren :

2 The elder women as mothers, the younger as sisters, with all purity.

3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.

4 But if any widows have children or nephews,



# I. TIMOTHEE.

For  
kind-  
ness.

Let them learn first to shew || piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God.

For deli-  
cately.

5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liveth || in pleasure, is dead while she liveth.

7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blamelesse.

For  
kindred.

8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own || house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse then an infidel.

For  
chosen.

9 Let not a widow be || taken into the number, under threescore yeers old, having been the wife of one man.

10 Well reported of for good works, if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.

11 But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry.

12 Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.

13 And withall they learn to be idle, wandring about from house to house; and not only idle, but railers also, and bus-bodies, speaking things which they ought not.

For  
for  
their  
railing.

14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.  
16 If any man or woman that beleeveth have widows, let them relieve them, and let not the church be charged, that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

\* Dist.  
25.4.

17 Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the word and doctrine.

18 For the scripture saith, \* Thou shalt not muzzle

## C H A P. VI.

muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn : and, \* The <sup>a Matthe.</sup> laborer is worthy of his reward. <sup>10. 10.</sup>

19 Against an elder receive not an accusation, but  $\parallel$  before two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sin, rebuke before all, that others <sup>10r.</sup> under- also may fear.

21 I charge thee before God, and the Lord Je-  
sus Christ, and the elect angels, that thou observe  
these things  $\parallel$  without preferring one before ano- <sup>10r.</sup>  
ther, doing nothing by partiality. <sup>without</sup>  
<sup>prejudice</sup>

22 Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be  
partaker of other mens sins. Keep thy self pure.

23 Drink no longer water, but use a little wine,  
for thy stomachs sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sins are open beforehand, going  
before to judgement: and some men they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good works of some are ma-  
nifest before hand, and they that are otherwise, can-  
not be hid.

## C H A P. VI.

1 Servants duties. 3 Avoid new fangled teach-  
ers. 6 The gain of godlinesse, and evil of co-  
vetousnesse.

**L**et as many servants as are under the yoke,  
count their own masters worthy of all honor,  
that the Name of God and his doctrine be not blas-  
phemed.

2 And they that have believing masters, let them  
not despise them, because they are brethren : but ra- <sup>10r. be-</sup>  
ther do them service, because they are  $\parallel$  faithful and <sup>believing,</sup>  
beloved, partakers of the benefite : these things teach  
and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not  
to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Je-  
sus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according  
to godlinesse.

4 He is  $\parallel$  proud, knowing nothing, but  $\parallel$  voting <sup>10r. a</sup>  
about questions and strifes of words, whereof com- <sup>fool.</sup>  
eth envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, <sup>10r. sch</sup>

5  $\parallel$  Perverse disputings of men of corrupt <sup>10r. gal-</sup>  
minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that <sup>lings one</sup>  
gain is godlinesse : from such withhold thy self. <sup>of ano-</sup>  
<sup>thers,</sup>

## I. TIMOTHIE.

6 But godlinesse with contentment is great gain.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out.

8 And having food and raiment, let us be therewith content.

9 But they that will be rich fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all evil, which while some coveted after, they have been seduced from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meeknesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession,

14. prof-  
fession.

14 That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ.

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords :

16 Who onely hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, or can see : to whom be honor and power everlasting. Amen.

46. uncer-  
tainty of  
riches.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy,

47. whole.

18 That they do good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate.

19 Laying up in store for themselves a good foundation, against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternal life.

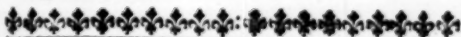
20 O Timothy keep that which is committed

## CHAP. I.

to thy trust, aboiding profane and vain bablings,  
and oppositions of science falsely so called :

21 Which some professing, have erred concern-  
ing the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothie was written from Lao-  
dicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia  
Pacariana.



¶ The second epistle of PAUL the apostle to  
TIMOTHIE.

## CHAP. I.

Pauls love to Timothie, and Timothies faith.

6 Paul giveth him divers exhortations. 15 Of  
Phygellus and Hermogenes.

**P**aul an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the  
will of God, according to the promise  
of life, which is in Christ Jesus.

2 To Timothie my dearly be-  
loved son; grace, mercy, and peace  
from God the Father, and Christ Je-  
sus our Lord.

3 I thank God whom I serbe from my forefa-  
thers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I  
have remembrance of thee in my prayers night and  
day,

4 Greatly desiring to see thee, being mindful of  
thy tears that I may be filled with joy.

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned  
faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy Gran-  
dmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am  
persuaded that in thee also.

6 Therefore I put thee in remembrance, that  
thou stir up the gift of God which is in thee, by the  
putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear,  
but of power, of love, and of a sound minde.

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimo-  
ny of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but be thou  
partaker of the afflictions of the gospel, according  
to the power of God.

## II. TIMOTHIE:

9 Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to his own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus, before the world began.

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

Or,  
wasted,

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things; nevertheless, I am not ashamed: for I know whom I have believed, and I am persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have committed unto him against that day.

13 Hold fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me, in faith and love, which is in Christ Jesus.

14 That good thing which was committed unto thee, keep, by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.

15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus, for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chain.

17 But when he was in Rome, he sought me out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day: and in how many things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

### CHAP. II

1 Timothy is exhorted to constancy and perseverance, and to shew himself approved. 17 Of Hymeneus and Philetus. 22 How the Lords servant ought to behave himself

**T**hou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus.

Or, by.

2 And the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach others also.

## C H A P. II.

3 Thou therefore endure hardnesse, as a good souldier of Iesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth, entangleth himself with the affairs of this life, that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if a man also stribe for masteries, yet is he not crowned except he stribe lawfully.

6 ¶ The husbandman that laboureth, must be first partaker of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say, and the Lord give thee understanding in all things.

8 Remember that Iesus Christ of the seed of David, was raised from the dead according to my gospel:

9 Wherein I suffer trouble as an evill doer, even unto bonds: but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I endure all things for the elects sakes, that they may also obtain the salvation which is in Christ Iesus, with eternal glory.

11 It is a faithfull saying: for if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him.

12 If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us.

13 If we beleefe not, yet he abideth faithfull, he cannot deny himself.

14 Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord, that they stribe not about words to no profit, but to the subverting of the hearers.

15 Study to shew thy self approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.

16 But shun prophane and vain bablings, for they will encrease unto more ungodlinesse:

17 And their word will eat as doth a canker: of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus.

18 Who concerning the truth have erred, saying, that the resurrection is past already, and overthrow the faith of some.

19 Nevertheless the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And let every one that nameth the Name of Christ, depart from iniquity.

*For, the husbandman is first must be partaker of the fruits*

*of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus.*

*For, the*

## II. TIMOTHIE.

20 But in a great house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but also of wood, and of earth: and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the masters use, and prepared unto every good work.

22 Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that they breed strifes.

Or, for  
bearing

24 And the servant of the Lord must not strive; but be gentle unto all men, apt to teach, patient,

25 In meekness instructing those that oppose themselves, if God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth.

Or.  
awake,  
Or.  
taken  
aliye.

26 And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

### CHAP. III.

1 Of the last dayes. 6 The enemies of the truth are described. 10 Pauls example propounded. 16 The scriptures are commended.

**T**his know also, that in the last dayes perilous times shall come.

2 For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy,

Or,  
make-  
bates,

3 Without natural affection, truce breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good;

4 Traitors, heady, high minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God.

5 Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.

6 For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts,

7 Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses

Soles

## CHAP. IIII.

Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt mindes, & reprobate concerning the faith.

17. of  
no judge-  
ment.  
12. thou  
hast been  
a dili-  
gent fol-  
lower of,

9 But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be manifest unto all men as theirs also was.

10 But & thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, chari-  
ty, patience,

11 Persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me.

12 Yea, and all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.

13 But evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving, and being deceived.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them:

15 And that from a childe thou hast known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness,

17 That the man of God may be perfect, & thoroughly furnished unto all good works.

18. per-  
fect,

## CHAP. IIII.

1 Pauls exhortation to Timothy, 6 The needes of Pauls death. 9 Paul willeth him to come to him

I Charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing, and his kingdom:

2 Preach the word, be instant in season, out of season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine.

3 For his time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine, but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears;

4 And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure affli-  
ctions,



## II. TIMOTHIE.

107.  
1081.

ous, do the work of an evangelist. I make full proof of thy ministry.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous Judge shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto them also that love his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me:

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica: Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the ministry.

12 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest bring with thee, and the books, but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil, the Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom be thou ware also, for he hath greatly withstood our words.

109.  
our  
1092

16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but all men forsook me: I pray God that it may not be laid to their charge.

17 Notwithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully known, and that all the Gentiles might hear: and I was delivered out of the mouth of the lion.

18 And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve me unto his heavenly kingdom to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick.

21 Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

## CHAP. I.

22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with thy spirit.  
Grace be with you. Amen.

The second epistle unto Timotheus, ordained  
the first bishop of the church of the Ephesians,  
was written from Rome, when Paul  
was brought before Nero the second time.



### THE EPISTLE OF PAUL

TO TITUS.

### CHAP. I.

1 Why Titus was left in Crete 6 How ministers  
should be qualified. 11 of evil teachers.

**P**aul a servant of God, and an apostle  
of Jesus Christ, according to the  
faith of Gods elect, & the acknow-  
ledging of the truth which is after  
godliness.

2 ¶ In hope of eternal life, which  
God that cannot lie promised before  
the world began: 12. for.

3 But hath in due times manifested his word  
through preaching, which is committed unto me, ac-  
cording to the commandment of God our Saviour:

4 To Titus mine own son after the common  
faith, grace, mercy, and peace from God the Father,  
and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou  
shouldest set in order the things that are wanting,  
and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed  
thee. 10. left  
and one,

6 If any be blamelesse, the husband of one wife,  
having faithful children, not accused of riot, or  
unruly.

7 For a bishop must be blamelesse, as the stew-  
ard of God: not self-willed, not soon angry, not  
given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre,

8 But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good  
men, sober, just, holy, temperate.

9 Holding fast the faithful word, as he hath  
been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine,  
both to exhort, and to convince the gainsayers.

10 For there are many unwholesome and vain talkers.

1 Tim.  
3.6.  
good  
things.  
10. in  
teaching

## TO TITUS.

and deceivers specially they of the circumcision:

11 Whole mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake.

12 One of themselves, even a prophet of their own, said, The Cretians are alway liars, evil beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witness is true: wherefore rebuke them sharply that they may be sound in the faith;

14 Not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men, that turn from the truth.

15 Unto the pure all things are pure, but unto them that are defiled, and unbelieving, is nothing pure, but even their minde and conscience is defiled.

Or,  
void of  
judg-  
ment,

16 They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work || reprobate.

### CHAP. II.

1 Paul'd relecth Titus both for his doctrine and life. 9 The duty of servants, and generally of all Christians.

**B**ut speak thou the things which become sound doctrine:

Or, vi-  
gilant.  
Or, holy  
women.  
Or,  
make  
haste.  
Or, wife.

2 That the aged men be || sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

3 The aged women likewise that they be in behaviour as becometh || holiness, not || false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things,

4 That they may teach the young women to be || sober, to love their husbands, to love their children

5 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

Or, dis-  
creet.

6 Young men likewise exhort to be || sober minded:

7 In all things shewing thy self a pattern of good works: in doctrine shewing incorruptness, gravity, sincerity,

8 Sound speech that cannot be condemned, that he that is of the contrary part, may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

Or, gain-  
saying.

9 Exhort servants to be obedient unto their own masters, and to please them well in all things, not || answering again;

## C H A P. III.

10 Not purloyning, but shewing all good fidelitie, that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things.

11 For the grace of God || that bringeth salvation, hath appeared to all men,

12 Teaching us, that denying ungodlinesse, and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world :

13 Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ,

14 Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority. Let no man despise thee,

## C H A P. III.

1 Titus is further directed what to teach, and what not. 20 To reiect obstinate hereticks,

12 And appointed by Paul to come unto him.

**P**Ut them in minde to be subject to principallities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good work,

2 To speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, but gentle, shewing all meeknesse unto all men.

3 For we our selves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envie, hateful, and hating one another.

4 But after that the kinnesse and || love of God our Saviour toward man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteousness, which we have done, but according to his mercie he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the holy Ghost,

6 Which he shed on us abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour :

7 That being justified by his grace we should be made heirs, according to the hope of eternal life.

8 This is a faithful saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which have beleev'd in God, might be careful to main-

12. that  
bringeth  
salvati-  
on to all  
men.  
hath ap-  
peared.

10. 1  
pity.

16.  
richly.

tain

## T O P H I L E M O N .

tain good works : these things are good and profitable unto men.

9 But avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and contentions, and strivings about the Law ; for they are unprofitable and vain.

10 A man that is an heretick, after the first and second admonition, reject :

11 Knowing that he that is such, is subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.

12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis : For I have determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the lawyer, and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

10r. pro-  
fesse  
house  
trader.

14 And let ours also learn to maintain good works for necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful.

15 All that are with me salute thee. Greet them that love us in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus, ordained the first Bishop of the Church of the Brit. ans from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

~~XXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXXX~~

### ¶ T H E E P I S T L E O F P A U L T O P H I L E M O N .

3 Pauls joy for Philemons faith and love. 9 He desireth him to forgive Onesimus, and to receive him again.

**P**aul a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy our brother, unto Philemon our dearly beloved, and fellow-labourer.

2 And to our beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-souldier, and to the Church in thy house.

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thank my God, making mention of thee alwayes in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Jesus, and toward all saints :

6 That

## TO PHILEMON.

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing, which is in you in Christ Jesus.

7 For we have great joy and consolation in thy love, because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ to enjoin thee that which is convenient;

9 Yet for loves sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Jesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my son Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds,

11 Which in time past was to thee unprofitable: but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I have sent again: thou therefore receive him that is mine own bowels.

13 Whom I would have retained with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I do nothing, that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever:

16 Not now as a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, specially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my self.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought; put that on mine account.

19 I Paul have written it with mine own hand, I will repay it: albeit I do not say to thee, how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides:

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more than I say.

22 But withal prepare me also a lodging: for I trust that through your prayers I shall be given unto you.

23 There

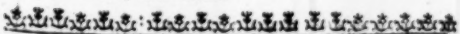
# TO THE HEBREWS.

23 There salute thee Epaphras, my fellow prisoner in Christ Jesus :

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow labouers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus a servant.



## THE EPISTLE OF PAUL THE apostle to the HEBREWS.

### CHAP. I.

1 Christ in these last times coming to us from the Father, & is preferred above the angels.

2 ¶ Who at sundry times and in diuers manners, spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

3 ¶ Hath in these last dayes spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worldes,

4 ¶ Who being the brightnesse of his glory, and the expresse image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the maiestie on high,

5 Being made so much better then the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name then they.

6 For unto which of the angels said he at any time, Thou art my son, this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son?

7 And again, when he bringeth in the first-begotten into the world, he saith, And let all the angels of God worship him.

8 And of the angels he saith, Who maketh his angels spirits, and his ministers a flame of fire.

9 But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever; a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of thy kingdom.

10 Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity,

\* Wisd.  
7.26.

4 Gr.  
right-  
nesse, or  
straight-  
nesse,

## CHAP. II.

iniquity, therefore God, even thy God hath anointed thee with the oil of gladnesse above thy fellows.

10 And \* thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth and the heavens are the works of thine hands. \* Psal. 107. 24. 134. 4.

11 They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment.

12 And as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed, but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail.

13 But to which of the angels said he at any time, \* Sit on my right hand untill I make thine enemies thy footstool? \* Psal. 110. 1. Math. 22. 44.

14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them, who shall be heirs of salvation?

## CHAP. II.

1 We must be obedient to Christ. 5 because he took our nature, 14 as it was necessary he should.

**T**herefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let them slip. † Gr run out as leaking vessels.

2 For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just recompence of reward:

3 How shall we escape if we neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard him,

4 God also bearing them witness, both with signes and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts, of the holy Ghost, according to his own will. † Gr distributions.

5 For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come, whereof we speak: \* Psal. 8. 4.

6 But one in a certain place testified, saying, \* What is man that thou art mindful of him? or the son of man that thou visitest him? 107. a little while, inferior to us

7 Thou madest him a little lower then the angels, thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands.

8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him



## TO THE HEBREWS.

him, he left nothing that is not put under him,  
But now we see not yet all things put under him.

10r. by.

9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower then the angels, & for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour, that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren.

12 Saying, I will declare thy Name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto thee.

\* psal.

18.

\* Isaiah

8.18.

13 And again, \* I will put my trust in him; and again, \* Behold, I, and the children which God hath given me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is the devil:

15 And deliver them, who through fear of death were all their life time subject to bondage.

16r. he  
taketh  
not hold  
of angels  
but of  
the seed  
of Abra-  
ham he  
taketh  
hold.

16 For verily he took not on him the nature of angels, but he took on him the seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful high priest, in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

### C H A P. III.

1 Christ is more worthy then Moses, & therefore we are more bound to beleeve in him.

**W**herefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostle and high priest of our profession Christ Jesus.

16r.

made.

2 Sam.

12.6.

2 Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all his house.

3 For

### CHAP. III.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glory then Moles, inasmuch as he who hath builded the house, hath more honer then the house.

4 For every house is builded by some man; but he that built all things, is God.

5 And Moles verily was faithful in all his house as a servant, for a testimony of those things which were to be spoken after.

6 But Christ as a son over his own house, whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence, and the resting of the hope firm unto the end.

7 Therefore as the holy Ghost saith, \* To day \* *Psalm 95. 7*  
If ye will hear his voice,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years.

10 Therefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They do alway erre in their hearts, and they have not known my wayes.

11 So I sware in my wrath, † They shall not enter into my rest. *† Gr. If they shall enter,*

12 Take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called, To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end.

15 Which it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts as in the provocation.

16 For some, when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit, not all that came out of Egypt by Moles.

17 But with whom was he grieved forty years? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carcases fell in the wilderness?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that beleebed not?

19 So we see that they could not enter in, because of unbelief.

# TO THE HEBREWS.

## CHAP. IIII.

1 The Christians rest is attained by faith. 12 The power of Gods word. 14 By our high priest Jesus we may go boldly to the throne of grace.

**L**et us therefore fear, lest a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.

2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

¶ For the word of hearing. Or, because they were not united by faith to.

3 For we which have beleebed, do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest, although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

4 For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.

5 And in this place again, If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached, entered not in, because of unbelief:

¶ The gospel was first preached

7 Again, he limiteth a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time, as it is said, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

¶ That is Joshua.

8 For if Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a rest to the people of God.

¶ Or, keeping of a sabbath.

10 For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God did from his.

11 Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest, lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief.

¶ Or, disobedience.

12 For the word of God is quick and powerful, and sharper then any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joynts and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.

14 Seeing then that we have great high priest,

that

## C H A P. V.

that is passed into the heavens. Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession:

15 For we have not an high priest, which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities: but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

16 Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy and finde grace to help in time of need.

## C H A P. V.

1 The authority and honor of Christs priesthood.

11 Negligence in the knowledge thereof re-  
proved.

**F**OR every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men, in things pertaining to God, that he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sins;

2 Who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that he himself also is compassed with infirmity.

3 And by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself to offer for sins.

4 And no man taketh this honor unto himself, but he that is called of God, as was Aaron.

5 So also, Christ glorified not himself to be made an high priest; but he that said unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

6 As he saith also in another place, Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

7 Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared:

8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him,

10 Called of God an high priest after the order of Melchisedec:

11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be

Or, I  
can rea-  
sonably  
bear  
with.

Or.  
for his  
piety.

## TO THE HEBREWS.

Gr. hath  
no expe-  
rience.  
Or,  
perfect.  
Or,  
of an ha-  
bitudes  
fiction.

be the first principles of the oracles of God, and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong meat.

13 For every one that useth milk, is unskillful in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe.

14 But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.

### C H A P. V I.

1 He exhorteth not to fall back from the faith,  
11 but to be stedfast. 12 To wait upon God,  
13 Who is sure of promise.

For the  
word of  
the be-  
ginning  
of Christ

**T**herefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith towards God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgement.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy Ghost,

5 And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come:

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance: seeing they crucifie to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God.

For, for

8 But that which beareth thorns and briers, is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

9 But beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak.

10 For God is not unrighteous, to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have shewed towards his Name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister.

## CHAP. VII.

11 And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence, to the full assurance of hope unto the end:

12 That ye be not slothfull, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by no greater, he swore by himself,

14 Saying, Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And so after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise.

16 For men verily swear by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsell, † confirmed it by an oath:

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us. † Gr. interposed himself by an oath.

19 Which hope we have as an ancre of the soul, both sure and stedfast, and which entrencheth into that within the veil,

20 Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even Jesus, made an high Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

## CHAP. VII.

1 Christ is a priest after the order of Melchisedec, 11 far above the priests of Aarons order.

For this Melchisedec king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him.

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all: first being by interpretation king of righteousness, and after that also king of Salem, which is king of peace:

3 Without father, without mother, † without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life: but made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continually. † Gr. without pedigree

4 Now consider how great this man was, unto whom

## TO THE HEBREWS.

whom even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.

5 And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loynes of Abraham:

10r. pe-  
digrec.

6 But he whose descent is not counted from them, received tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the less is blessed of the better.

8 And here men that die receive tithes: but there he receiveth them, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth.

9 And as I may so say, Levi also who receiveth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham.

10 For he was yet in the loins of his father, when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law) what further need was there, that another priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

12 For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest:

16 Who is made not after the law of a carnall commandment, but after the power of an endless life.

17 For he testifieth, Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before, for the weaknesse and unprofitablenesse thereof.

19 For

## C H A P. VIII.

19 For the law made nothing perfect, ¶ But the bringing in of a better hope did: by the which we draw nigh unto God.

20 And in as much as not without an oath he was made priest.

21 (For those priests were made ¶ without an oath: but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, The Lord sweare and will not repent, thou art a priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec.)

22 By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.

23 And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death.

24 But this man, because he continueth ever, hath an ¶ unchangeable priesthood.

25 Wherefore he is able also to save them ¶ to the uttermost, that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmlesse, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher then the heavens.

27 Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the peoples: for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

28 For the law taketh men high priests which have infirmity, but the word of the oath which was since the law, maketh the Son, who is ¶ consecrated for evermore.

## C H A P. VIII.

1 By Christs eternal priesthood, the Levitical priesthood is abolished, 7 and the temporal covenant by the eternal.

**N**OW of the things which we have spoken, this is the sum: we have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the majesty in the heavens:

2 A minister ¶ of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.

10r.  
but it  
was the  
bringing  
in.  
10r.  
without  
swearing  
of an  
oath.  
\* Plam.  
120r.

10r.  
which  
passeth  
not from  
one to  
another.  
10r. over  
more.

10r. per-  
fected.

10r. of  
holy  
things.



## TO THE HEBREWS.

¶ they  
are  
priests.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a Priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law.

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle. For he saith he) that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.

¶ re-  
frament.

6 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the Mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises.

7 For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.

8 For finding fault with them he saith, Behold, the days come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and the house of Judah.

9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers, in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

\* Jer.  
31. 33.  
† Gr.  
give.  
upon.

10 For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord, \* I will † put my laws into their minds, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbor, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more.

13 In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

### C H A P. IX.

1 The rites & bloody sacrifices of the law, are inferior to the blood and sacrifice of Christ.

¶ corre-  
monies.

**T**hen verily the first covenant had also ordinances of divine service, and a worldly sanctuary.

## C H A P. I X.

2 For there was a tabernacle made, the first where in was the candlestick, and the table, and the shew-bread, which is called the sanctuary. the sanctuary.

3 And after the second veil, the tabernacle which is called the holiest of all :

4 Which had the golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded, and the tables of the covenant.

5 And over it the cherubims of glory shadowing the mercy-seat; of which we cannot now speak particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle, accomplishing the service of God.

7 But into the second went the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and for the errors of the people.

8 The holy Ghost thus signifying, that the way into the holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first tabernacle was yet standing.

9 Which was a figure for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience,

10 Which stood only in meats and drinks, and divers washings, and carnal ordinances imposed on them, until the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater, and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building :

12 Neither by the blood of goats and calves; but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.

13 For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh :

14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God ?

## TO THE HEBREWS.

15 And so; this cause he is the Mediator of the new testament, that by means of death: for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called, might receive the promise of eternal inheritance.

Or, he  
brought  
in.

16 For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator.

17 For a testament is of force after men are dead: otherwise it is of no strength at all while the testator liveth.

Or,  
purified.

18 Whereupon neither the first testament was dedicated without blood.

Or,  
purple.

19 For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves, and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people.

20 Saying, This is the blood of the testament, which God hath enjoined unto you.

21 Moreover he sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministry.

22 And almost all things are by the law purged with blood: and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heavens should be purified with these, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices than these.

24 For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us.

25 Nor yet that he should offer himself often as the high priest entereth into the holy place, every year with blood of others:

26 For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself.

27 And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgement.

28 So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of

## CHAP. X.

of many. and unto them that look for him, shall he appear the second time without sin, unto salvation.

### CHAP. X.

1 The weaknesse of the sacrifices of the law, and power of Christs sacrifice 19 An exhortation to faith and patience.

**F**or the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered yee by yee continually, make the comers thereunto perfect.

2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered, because that the worshipp<sup>r</sup> once purged, should have had no more conscience of sins?

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every yee.

4 For it is not possible that the blood of buls and of goats should take away sins.

5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith. Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body<sup>h</sup> hast thou prepared me:

6 In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast had no pleasure:

*For thou  
hast sin-  
ned me,*

7 Then said I, Lo, I come, (in the volume of the booke it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.

8 Above when he said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt offerings, and offering for sin thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, which are offered by the law:

9 Then said he, Lo, I come, to do thy will (O God:) We take away the first, that he may establish the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified, through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all.

11 And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins.

12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God.

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool.

14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified.

## TO THE HEBREWS.

15 Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witnesse to us: for after that he had said before,

• Jer.  
31. 33.

16 This is the covenant that I will make with them after those dayes, saith the Lord. I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their mindes will I write them:

17 And their sin: and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin

1 Cor. ii.  
14.

19 Having therefore, brethren, holinesse to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,

Heb. new  
made.

20 By a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us through the blood, that is to say, by his flesh.

21 And having an high priest over the house of God:

22 Let us draw neer with a true heart, in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water.

23 Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering (for he is faithful that promised)

24 And let us consider one another, to provoke unto love, and to good worke.

25 Not forsaking the assembling of our selves together, as the manner of some is: but exhorting one another, and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.

26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sins,

27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgement, and fiery indignation, which shall devour the adversaries.

28 He that despised Moses law, died without mercy, under two or three witnesses.

29 Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath troden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of grace?

## CHAP. XI.

pp Isaac : and he that had received the promises,  
 and up his onely begotten son,

18 || Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall  
 thy seed be called : 107, 108;

19 Accounting that God was able to raise him  
 up even from the dead : from whence also he recei-  
 ved him in a figure.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau con-  
 cerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob when he was a dying, blessed  
 both the sons of Joseph, and worshipped, leaning  
 upon the top of his staff.

22 By faith Joseph when he died, || made men- 109, remem-  
 bred.  
 tion of the departing of the children of Israel, and  
 gave commandment concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moses when he was born, was hid  
 three moneths of his parents, because they saw he  
 was a proper child, and they not afraid of the  
 kings commandment.

24 By faith Moses when he was come to years,  
 refused to be called the son of Pharaohs daughter,

25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the  
 people of God, then to enjoy the pleasures of sin for  
 a season :

26 Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater 110, for  
 Christ  
 riches then the treasures in Egypt : for he had re-  
 spect unto the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the  
 wrath of the king : for he endured, as seeing him  
 who is invisible.

28 Through faith he kept the passover, and the  
 sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first-  
 born, should touch them.

29 By faith they passed through the Red-sea as  
 by dry land : which the Egyptians assaying to do,  
 were drowned.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, af-  
 ter they were compassed about seven days.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with  
 them || that beloeved not, when she had received the 111, that  
 were dis-  
 obedient,  
 messengers with peace.

32 And what shall I more say? for the time

## TO THE HEBREWS.

would fail me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak and of Samson, and of Jephthah, of David also and of Samuel, and of the prophets :

33 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions.

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, were valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raised to life again : as others were tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection.

36 And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea moreover of bonds & imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword : they wandered about in sheep skins, and goats skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthy : they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens, and caves of the earth.

39 And these all having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise :

40 God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us, should not be made perfect.

### CHAP. XII

1 An exhortation to faith, patience, and godliness. 22 A commendation of the new testament above the old

**W**herefore, seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us.

2 Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

## C H A P. XII.

4 Ye haue not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin.

5 And ye haue forgotten the exhortation, which speaketh unto you as unto children. My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth eve y son whom he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons: for what son is he whom the Father chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chastisement, what of all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons.

9 Furthermore we haue had fathers of our flesh, which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of Spirits, and live?

10 For they verily for a few dayes chastened us, after their own pleasure, but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.

11 Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless, afterwards it yieldeth the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.

12 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees.

13 And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord:

15 Looking diligently, lest any man fail of the grace of God, lest any root of bitterness springing up, trouble you, and thereby many be defiled:

16 Lest there be any fornicator or profane person as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright.

17 For ye know how that afterwards when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears.

18 For ye are not come unto the mount that



## TO THE HEBREWS.

might be touched, and that burnes with fire, nor unto blacknesse, and darknesse, and tempest,

19 And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of voices, which voice they that heard, intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more.

20 For they could not endure that which was commanded: and if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly feare and quake.

22 But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels:

18. in-  
rolled,  
19. co-  
Rament.

23 To the general assembly, & church of the first-born which are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all & to spirits of just men made perfect:

24 And to Jesus the mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things then that of Abel.

25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from him that speaketh from heaven.

26 Whose voice then shook the earth, but now he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth only, but also heaven.

Or, may  
be shaken

27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken, may remain.

Or, let  
us hold  
fast.

28 Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence, & godly fear.

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

### C H A P. XIII.

1 Divers admonitions to charity and other godly vertues. 10 The conclusion of the epistle.

**L**et us therefore love continue.

2 Be not forgetfull to entertain strangers, for thereby some have entertained angels unawares.

3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them; and them which suffer adversity, as being

## CHAP. XI.

30 For he know him that hath said, 'Vengeance' <sup>Deut.</sup>  
belongeth unto me. I will recompence, saith the <sup>at 35.</sup>  
Lord: and again. The Lord shall iudge his people. <sup>Rom. 12.</sup>

31 It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of <sup>19.</sup>  
the living God.

32 But call to remembrance the former times in  
which after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great  
fight of afflictions:

33 Partly whilst ye were made a gazing stock  
both by reproches and afflictions, and partly whilst  
ye became companions of them that were so used.

34 For ye had compassion of me in my bonds,  
and took joyfully the spoiling of your goods, know-  
ing in your selves that ye have in heaven a better  
and an enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence  
which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye have need of patience, that after ye have  
done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

37 For yet a little while, and he that shall come,  
will come, and will not tarry.

38 Now the just shall live by faith: but if any man  
draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

39 But we are not of them who draw back unto  
perdition: but of them that believe to the saving of  
the soul.

## CHAP. XI.

1 What faith is. 6 Without it we cannot please  
God. 7 The fruits thereof in the fathers of old. <sup>100.</sup>

**N**OW faith is the substance of things hoped <sup>ground</sup>  
for, the evidence of things not seen. <sup>or confi-</sup>

2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we understand that the worlds  
were framed by the word of God. so that things  
which are seen, were not made of things which do  
appear.

4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excel-  
lent sacrifice then Cain, by which he obtained wit-  
nesse that he was righteous, God testifying of his  
gifts: and by it he being dead, yet speaketh.

5 By faith Enoch was translated, that he should  
not see death, and was not found, because God had <sup>100.</sup>  
taken him. <sup>is yet</sup>

6 And without faith it is impossible to please <sup>spoken</sup>  
him, who saith, I will be a Father to the fatherless, <sup>ot.</sup>  
and a Father to the widow, and a Father to the <sup>translated</sup>  
fatherless.

## TO THE HEBREWS.

translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God.

6 But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God, must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.

¶ Or,  
being  
wary.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God, of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house, by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith.

8 By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise.

10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara her self received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.

† Or, ac-  
cording  
to faith.

13 These all died † in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, & were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers & pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things, declare plainly that they seek a country.

15 And truly if they had been mindfull of that country, from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned:

16 But now they desire a better country, that is an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city.

17 By faith Abraham when he was tried, offered up

## C H A P. II.

9 But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors.

10 For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.

11 For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. 1 Cor. that law which said.

12 So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty.

13 For he shall have judgement without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgement. 18. glory rich.

14 What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?

15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food,

16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed, and filled: notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needfull to the body, what doth it profit?

17 Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone.

18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.

19 Thou believest that there is one God, thou doest well: the devils also believe and tremble.

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead?

21 Was not Abraham our Father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar?

22 Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

23 And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, Abraham beleebed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the friend of God. \* Gen. 15. 6. Rom. 4. 3. Gal. 3. 6.

24 Ye see then, how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.

25 Like.

# JAMES.

25 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers and sent them out another way?

10r.  
breath.

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead: so faith without works is dead also.

## CHAP. III.

5 The tongue must be bridled. 13 They that are truly wise, be milde and peaceable, without envying and strife.

10r.  
judge-  
ment.

**M**y brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we shall receive the greater condemnation.

2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, he same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouths that they may obey us & we turn about their whole body.

4 Behold also the ship, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helm, whither so ever the governour listeth.

10r.  
wood.

5 Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things: behold how great a matter a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue amongst our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

10r.  
nature.  
10r.  
nature of  
man.

7 For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of mankind.

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.

9 Therewith blesse we God, even the Father: and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing & cursing: my brethren, these things ought not so to be.

10r.  
hole.

11 Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter?

12 Can the fig-tree, my brethren bear olives: either a vine figs? so can no fountain both peld salt water and fresh.

## CHAP. XIII.

being your selves also in the bo. y.

4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

5 Let your conversation be without covetousness: and be content with such things as ye have. For he hath said, " I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee. " Joh. 1.5.

6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me.

7 Remember them which I have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God, whose faith follow, considering the end of their conversation. Joh. 1.5. are the guides,

8 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

9 Be not carried about with divers and strange doctrines: for it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

10 We have an altar wherof they have no right to eat, which serve the tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest for sin, are burnt without the camp.

12 Wherefore Jesus also, y<sup>e</sup> he might sanctifie the people with his own blood, suffered without y<sup>e</sup> gate.

13 Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach.

14 " For here have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come. " Mich. 3.10.

15 By him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, giving thanks to his Name.

16 But to do good, and to communicate forget not, for with such sacrifices God is well pleased. 16. conf. sing to.

17 Obey them that I have the rule over you, and submit yourselves: for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that is unpardonable for you. 16. guide.

18 Pray for us: for we trust we have a good conscience.

## JAMES.

conscience in all things, willing to live honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now the God of peace, that bringeth again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting Covenant,

¶ Or, re-  
stament.  
¶ Or,  
aving.

21 Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, & working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

22 I beseech you brethren, suffer the word of exhortation, for I have written a letter unto you in few words.

23 Know ye, that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

Written to the Hebrews, from Italy by Timothy.

~~~~~

¶ The general Epistle of

JAMES.

CHAP. I.

We must rejoyce under the crosse, & ask patience of God. 19 hear the word, and do thereunto.

26 What pure religion is.

JAMES a servant of God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My brethren count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations.

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience.

4 But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect, and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not: and it shall be given him.

6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering
for:

C H A P. I.

say he that waibereth is like a waue of the sea, driuen with the winde, and tossed.

7 For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is unstable in all his wayes.

9 Let the brother of low degree || reioyce in 10r.
glory. that he is exalted:

10 But the rich in that he is made low: because as the flower of the grasse he shall passe away.

11 For the sun is no sooner risen with a burning heat, but it withereth the grasse; and the flower thereof falleth, and the grace of the fashion of it perisheth: so also shall the rich man fade away in his wayes.

12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation: for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown of life which the Lord hath promised to them that love him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man.

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. 10r.
10v.

15 When lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin when it is finished, bringeth forth death.

16 Do not erre, my beloved brethren.

17 Every good gift, and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadow of turning.

18 Of his own will begat he us, with the word of truth, that we should be a kinde of first fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousness of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse, and superfluity of naughtinesse, and receive with meeknesse the ingrafted word which is able to save your souls.

22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.

JAMES.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glasse:

24 For he beholdeth himself, & goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

For,
doing.

26 If any man among you seem to be religious, and hideth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain.

27 Pure religion, and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

CHAP. II.

■ Christians must not regard the rich, and despise the poor. 14 Faith without works is dead.

My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.

† Gr. syn-
agogue.

2 For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment:

For,
well, or,
seemly.

3 And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place: and say to the poor, Stand thou here, or sit under my footstool:

4 Are ye not then partial in your selves, and are become judges of evil thoughts?

For, that.

5 Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom, which he hath promised to them that love him?

6 But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seat?

7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy Name, by the which ye are called?

8 If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thy self, ye do well.

9 But

CHAP. IIII.

13 Who is a wise man endued with knowledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good conversation, his works with meeknesse of wisdom.

14 But if ye have bitter envying, and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth.

15 This wisdom is earthly, not from above, but carnal, || sensual, devilish.

16 For where envying and strife is, there is confusion, and every evil work.

17 But the wisdom that is from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, || without partiality, and without hypocrisy.

18 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace, of them that make peace.

CHAP. IIII.

Against covetousnesse, and pance, and pride, and detraction, and rash censuring.

From whence come wars and fightings among you? come they not hence, even of your || lusts that war in your members?

2 Ye lust, and have not: ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot obtain: ye fight and war, yet ye have not, because ye ask not.

3 Ye ask and receive not because ye ask amiss, that ye may consume it upon your || lusts.

4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God.

5 Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth || to envy?

6 But he giveth more grace, wherefore he saith, God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto the humble.

7 Submit your selves therefore to God: resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you: cleanse your hands ye sinners, and purifie your hearts, ye double minded.

9 Be afflicted, and mourn, and weep: let your laughter

Mr. natural, & sensual, carnal, or, unquiet, idle, without wronging.

Mr. brawlings, pleasures

Mr. pleasures

Mr. enviously, Prov. 3.34. 1 Pet. 5.5

JAMES:

laughter be turned into mourning, and your joy to heaviness.

10 Humble your selves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you up.

11 Speak not evil one of another, (brethren) he that speaketh evil of his brother, and judgeth his brother, speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law: but if thou judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.

12 There is one Law-giver, who is able to save, and to destroy: who art thou that judgest another?

13 Go to now ye that say, Today, or tomorrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy, and sell, and get gain:

14 Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow: * for what is your life? It is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away.

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that.

16 But now ye rejoice in your haughtings: all such rejoicing is evil.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doth it not, to him it is sin.

CHAP. V.

1 Of wicked rich men. 7 Of patience. 13 To forbear swearing. 13 To pray in adversity, and sing in prosperity.

Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted, and your garments moth eaten.

3 Your gold and silver is cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire: ye have heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Behold the hire of the labourers which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: the cries of them which have reaped, are entered into the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton: ye have nourished your hearts, as in a day of slaughter.

* Prov.
27.1.
For
mis.

CHAP. V.

6 We have condemned, and killed the just, and do not resist you.

7 ¶ Be patient therefore brethren, unto the coming of the Lord: behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye also patient, stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 ¶ Judge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the door.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the Name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure, who have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay: lest ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray, Is any merry? let him sing psalms.

14 Is any sick among you? let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the Name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up: and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him.

16 Confesse your faults one to another, and pray for another, that ye may be healed: the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months.

18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, if any of you do erre from the truth, and one convert him,

20 Let him know, that he which converteth the
Amec

13.
belong
patient
or, suffer
with
long pa-
tience.

30.
green, or,
grievous

30.
in his
prayer.

I. PETER.

stranger from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.



The first Epistle of the apostle PETER.

CHAP. I.

He blesteth God for his spiritual graces. 10 Salvation in Christ prophesied of old. 13 Antihortation to godliness.



Ever an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, and Bithynia,

Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ: grace unto you and peace be multiplied.

4 Gr.
much.

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope, by the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead,

8 Or,
for us.

4 To an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you,

5 Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time,

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season (if need be) ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations.

7 That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour, and glory, at the appearing of Jesus Christ.

8 Whom having not seen ye love, in whom though now ye see him not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable, and full of glory,

9 Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls:

10 Of which salvation the prophets have enquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace that should come unto you.

CHAP. I.

11 Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, what it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you, with the help of Christ sent down from heaven, which things the angels desire to look into.

13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, & hope to the end, for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ:

14 As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you, is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation:

16 Because it is written, *Be ye holy for I am holy.

17 And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every mans works; all the time of your sojourning here in fear:

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your Fathers:

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish, and without spot.

20 Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you;

21 Who by him do believe in God that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit, unto unfeigned love of the brethren: see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently,

23 Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God which liveth and abideth for ever.

24 ¶ For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass: the grass withereth,

† 6. per.
sally.

* Levit.
11. 44.
& 1. 2.
& 30. 7.

¶ For
that.

eth

I. PETER.

eth and the flower thereof falleth away.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever: and this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you.

C H A P. II.

1 He doth horteth them from the breach of charity,

4 He sheweth Christ is the foundation 13 Obedience to magistrates. 18 Servants duties.

Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrites, and envies, and evil speakings,

2 As new born babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby,

3 If so be ye have tasted that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom coming as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious.

10. be
ye built.

5 Ye also as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood to offer up spiritual sacrifice, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.

* Isaiah
28. 16.

psal. 118.
22.

Matth.
21. 42.

Acts 4. 13

10.
he is an
honour.

* Isaiah
5. 14.

10.
a pur-
chased

people.

10.
vermes.

* Hos. 2.
23.

6 Wherefore it is contained in the scriptures. * Behold, I lay in Zion a chief corner stone, elect, precious, and he that believeth on him, shall not be confounded.

7 Unto you therefore which believe, he is precious; but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner.

8 * And a stone of stumbling, & a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people, that ye should shew forth the praises of him, who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: * which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul,

12 Having your conversation honest among the Gentiles,

CHAP. III.

Gentiles, that whereas they speak against you as ^{10r,} ^{wherein,} evil doers, they may by your good works which they shall behold, glorifie God in the day of visitation.

13 Submit your selves to every acquaintance of man for the Lords sake, whether it be to the king, or supream,

14 Or unto governours, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil doers, and by the praise of them that do well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As free, and not using your liberty for a cloak of maliciousnesse, but as the servants of God. ^{10r,} ^{having.}

17 Honour all men, Love the brother-hood, fear God, Honour the king. ^{10r,} ^{eternall}

18 Servants, be subject to your masters with all fear, not onely to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.

19 For this is thank-worship, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. 20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God:

21 For when herunto were ye called: because ^{10r,} ^{thank.} Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps. ^{10r,} ^{Some read, For you.}

22 Which did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not, but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously. ^{10r,} ^{committed his cause}

24 Who his own self bare our sins in his body upon the tree, that we being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness, by whose stripes ye were healed. ^{10r,} ^{to}

25 For ye were as sheep going astray, but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of our souls.

CHAP. III.

The duty of wives and husbands each to other.

An exhortation to unity, 14 and to suffer persecution. 19 Christs benefits to the old world.

I. P E T E R.

Likewise, ye wives, be in subjection to your own husbands, that if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives :

2 While they behold your chaste conversation coupled with fear.

3 Whose adorning, let it not be that outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel.

4 But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this manner in the old time, the holy women also who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being in subjection unto their own husbands.

6 Even as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters ye are as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any amazement.

7 Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife as unto the weaker vessel; and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindered.

8 Finally be ye all of one mind, having compassion one of another, as love as brethren, as pitiful, be courteous,

9 Not rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing; but contrariwise blessing, knowing that ye are thereunto called, that ye should inherit a blessing.

10 For he that will love life, and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile.

11 Let him eschew evil and do good, let him seek peace, and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against them that do evil.

13 And who is he that will harm you, if ye be followers of that which is good?

14 But if ye suffer for righteousness sake, happy are ye, and be not afraid of their terror, neither be troubled:

CHAP. IIII.

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and be ready alwayes to geve an answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you, with meeke nesse and low feare :

16 Having a good conscience, that whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good conversation in Christ.

Reverence

17 For it is better, if the will of God be so, that you suffer for well doing, then for evil doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickned by the spirit :

19 By which also he went and preached unto the spirits in prison.

20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the long-suffering of God waited in the dayes of Noah, while the ark was a preparing: wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.

21 The like figure whereunto, even baptism, doth now save us (not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God) by the resurrection of Jesus Christ :

22 Who is gone into heaven, and is on the right hand of God, angels, and authorities, and powers, all being made subject unto him.

CHAP. IIII.

He exhorteth to cease from sin : 12 and comforteth them against persecution.

As much then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm your selves likewise with the same minde : for he that hath suffered in the flesh, hath ceased from sin :

2 That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh, to the lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousnesse, lusts, exesse of wine, revellings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries.

4 Wherein they think it strange, that you turn

I. PETER.

not with them to the same exccesse of riot, speaking
evil of you :

5 Who shall give account to him that is ready
to judge the quick and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the gospel preached
also to them that are dead, that they might be judged
according to men in the flesh, but live according to
God in the spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand : be ye
therefore sober, and watch unto prayer.

8 And above all things have fervent charity
among your selves : for charity shall cover the mul-
titude of sins.

9 Use hospitality one to another without grum-
ing.

10 As every man hath received the gift, even so
minister the same one to another, as good stewards
of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speak, let him speak as the oracles
of God : if any man minister, let him do it as of
the ability which God giveth, that God in all things
may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be
praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the
fiery trial, which is to try you, as though some
strange thing happened unto you.

13 But rejoyce, in as much as ye are partakers
of Christs sufferings ; that when his glory shall be
revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

14 If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ,
happy are ye, for the Spirit of glory and of God
resteth upon you : on their part he is evil spoken
of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or
as a thief, or as an evil doer, or as back-biter, or
other mens matters.

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian, let him
not be ashamed, but let him glorifie God on this
behalf.

17 For the time is come that judgement must be-
gin at the house of God : and if it first begin at us,
what shall the end be of them that obey not the
word of God :

107.
will.

Read this day of

C H A P. V.

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls to him in well doing, as unto a faithful creator.

C H A P. V.

He exhorteth the elders to feed their flocks, the younger to obey, and all to be sober, watchful and constant: 9 to resist the devil.

The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed.

2 Feed the flock of God || which is among you, for as much as in you is taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind:

3 Neither as || being lords over Gods heritage: Or, over ruling. but being ensamples to the flock.

4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise ye younger submit, your selves unto the elder, yea, all of you be subject one to another, as be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble:

6 Humble your selves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time,

7 Casting all your care upon him: for he careth for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant: because your adversary the devil as a roaring lion walketh about, seeking whom he may devour.

9 Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while, make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, settle you.

11 To him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

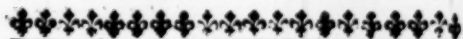
12 By Sylvanus a faithful brother unto you

II. PETER.

(as I suppose) I have written briefly, exhorting and testifying, that this is the true grace of God, wherein ye stand.

13 The church that is at Babylon elected together with you, saluteth you, and so doth Marcus my son.

14 Greet ye one another with a kisse of charity: peace be with you all ye are in Christ Jesus. Amen.



¶ The second epistle general of Peter.

CHAP. I

1 He confirmeth them, 5 and exhorteth them to make their calling sure. 12 He speaketh of his own death, and warneth them to be constant in the faith.

Simon Peter a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us, through the righteousness of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ:

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you, through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord,

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of him that hath called us unto glory and virtue.

For, by: 4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises, that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this, giving all diligence, add to your faith, virtue: and to virtue, knowledge;

6 And to knowledge, temperance; and to temperance, patience; and to patience, godliness;

7 And to godliness, brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness, charity.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they make you that ye shall neither be barren, nor unfruitful

C H A P. I.

fruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blinde, and cannot see far off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins.

10 Therefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure: for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall.

11 For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

13 Now I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up, by putting you in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as ^{* John} our Lord Jesus Christ ^{21.17.} hath shewed me.

15 Wherefore, I will endeavour that you may be able after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

16 For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of his majesty.

17 For he received from God the Father, honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

19 We have also a more sure word of prophecy, whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, untill the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts:

20 Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation:

21 For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the holy Ghost. 19. at any time

II. PETER.

CHAP. II.

1 He foretelleth them of false teachers, 10 and fully describeth their manners.

But there were false prophets also among the people; even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

10. la-
scivious
wayes,
as some
c. pies
read.

2 And many shall follow their || pernicious wayes, by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of:

3 And through covetousnesse shall they with feigned words make merchandize of you, who shall receive their judgement now of a long time lyingethnot, and their damnation standeth not.

4 For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darknesse, to be referred unto judgement:

5 And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the right person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly.

6 And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly:

7 And delivered just Lot vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds.)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgement to be punished:

10. do-
minion.
2. Jude 8

10 But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleannesse, and despise || government. * Presumptuous are they, self-willed: they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities.

2 Some
read,
against
them-
selves.

11 Whereas angels which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation || against them before the Lord.

12 But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that

CHAP. II.

they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption.

13 And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time: spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings, while they feast with you:

14 Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin, beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices: cursed children:

15 Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness;

16 But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with mans voice, forbade the madness of the prophet.

17 These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.

18 For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error.

19 While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage.

20 For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again intangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse than the beginning.

21 For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, then after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them.

22 But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb: The dog is turned to his own vomit again, and the sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.

II. PETER.

CHAP. III.

3 The certainty of Christs coming to judgement.
10 The manner how the world shall be destroyed. 11 An exhortation to godlinesse.

This second epistle (beloved) I now write unto you in both which I stir up your pure mindes by way of remembrance:

2 That ye may be mindeful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandment of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last dayes scoffers, walking after their own lusts,

4 And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water, and in the water.

† Cr. con-
sting.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement, and perdition of ungodly men.

8 But (beloved) be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeers, and a thousand yeers as one day.

9 The Lord is not slack concerning his promise (as some men count slacknesse) but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burnt up.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godlinesse,

30. hast-
ing the
coming,

12 Looking for, and hastning unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire

C H A P. I.

He shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat :

13 Wherefore we, according to his promise, look for new heavens, and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.

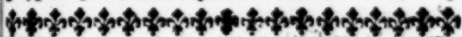
14 Wherefore (beloved) seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.

15 And account that the long suffering of the Lord is salvation, even as our beloved brother Paul also, according to the wisdom given unto him hath written unto you.

16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things, in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable, wrest, as they do also the other scriptures unto their own destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also be brought away to the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness.

18 But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ: to him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.



¶ THE FIRST EPISTLE

general of JOHN.

C H A P. I.

1 He describeth the person of Christ, & in whom is eternal life, by communion with God: 5 to which we must joyn holiness of life.

WHat which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled of the word of life.

2 (For the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us.)

3 That which we have seen and heard, declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship is with the Father,

I. JOHN.

and with his Son Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darknesse at all.

6 If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darknesse, we lie, and do not the truth.

7 But if we walk in the light, as he is in his light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Iesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.

8 If we say that we have no sin, we deceive our selves, and the truth is not in us.

9 If we confesse our sin, he is faithfull, and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousnesse.

10 If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us.

CHAP. II.

1 Christ our advocate. 3 To know God is to keep his commandments. 9 To love our brethren, 15 and not to love the world.

MY little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Iesus Christ the righteous.

2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not for ours onely, but also for the sins of the whole world.

3 And hereby we do know that we know him, if we do keep his commandments.

4 He that saith, I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, & the truth is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected: hereby know we that we are in him.

6 He that saith, he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk, even as he walked.

7 Whereby, I write no new commandment unto you: but an old commandment which ye had from the beginning: the old commandment is the word which ye have heard from the beginning.

8 Again, a new commandment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in you: because the dark-

CHAP. II.

darknesse is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that saith he is in the light, and hateth his brother, is in darknesse even until now.

10 He that loveth his brother, abideth in the light, and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

†Gr.
scandal.

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darknesse, and walketh in darknesse, & knoweth not whether he goeth, because that darknesse hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for his Names sake.

13 I write unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning: I write unto you, young men, because you have overcome the wicked one. I write unto you, little children, because ye have known the Father.

14 I have written unto you, fathers, because ye have known him that is from the beginning: I have written unto you, young men, because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you, and ye have overcome the wicked one.

15 Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, & the lust thereof, but he that doth the will of God, abideth for ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists, whereby we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have continued with us: but they went out, that they might be made manifest, that they were not of us.

20 But we have an unction from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I have not written unto you, because ye know not the truth: but because ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar, but he that denieth that Jesus

I. JOHN.

is the Christ: he is Antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Son.

23 Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father: but he that acknowledgeth the Son, hath the Father also.

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning: if that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, even eternal life.

26 These things have I written unto you, concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you: and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie: and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

Or, it.

28 And now, little children, abide in him, that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.

Or, know ye

29 If ye know that he is righteous: ye know that every one which doth righteousness is born of him.

CHAP. III.

1 God manifesteth his love in making us his sons:

3 who must be pure as he is pure.

BEholds, what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God: therefore the world knoweth us not, because it knew him not.

2 Behold now, now are we the sons of God, and it hath not yet appeared what we shall be: but we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him: for we shall see him as he is.

3 And every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sin, transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law.

5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins, and in him is no sin.

6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither known him.

7 Lik

CHAP. III.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you: he that doth righteousness, is righteous, even as he is righteous.

8 He that committeth sin, is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning: for this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

9 Whosoever is born of God, doth not commit sin: for his seed remaineth in him, and he cannot sin, because he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doth not righteousness, is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

11 For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another.

12 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother: and wherefore slew he him? because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.

13 Marbel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren: he that loveth not his brother, abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother, is a murderer; and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

16 Whereby perceive we the love of God, because he laid down his life for us, and we ought to lay down our lives for the brethren.

17 But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his brother hath need, and uttereth up his bowels of compassion from him; how dwelleth the love of God in him?

18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.

19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him.

20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we confidence towards God.

22 And

10.
com-
mand-
ment.

10.
per-
swade.

I. JOHN.

22 And whatsoever we ask, we receive of him, because we keep his commandment, and do those things that are pleasing in his sight.

23 And this is his commandment, that we should believe on the Name of his Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

24 And he that keepeth his commandments, dwelleth in him, and he in him: and hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

CHAP. IIII.

1 He warneth them not to believe all teachers, but to try them by the rules of the catholic faith, 7 and by many reasons exhorteth them to brotherly love.

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits, whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God.

3 And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh, is not of God: and this is that spirit of Antichrist, whereof you have heard & it should come, & even now already is it in the world.

4 Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the world.

5 They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.

6 We are of God: he that knoweth God, heareth us: he that is not of God, heareth not us. hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error.

7 Beloved, let us love one another; for love is of God: and every one that loveth, is born of God, and knoweth God.

8 He that loveth not, knoweth not God: for God is love.

9 In this was manifested the love of God towards us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that

CHAP. V.

that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins.

11 Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another.

12 No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us.

13 Whereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit.

14 And we have seen, and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoever shall confesse that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And we have known, and beleeved the love that God hath to us. God is love, and he that dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgement, because as he is, so are we in this world.

18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment: he that feareth is not made perfect in love.

19 We love him, because he first loved us.

20 If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar. For he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen?

21 And this commandment have we from him, that he who loveth God, love his brother also.

CHAP. V.

1 He that loveth God, loveth his children, and keepeth his commandments, which to the faithful are not grievous. 2 Jesus is able to save us.

Whoever beleeueth that Jesus is Christ, is born of God, and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him also that is begotten of him.

3 By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God, and keep his commandments.

4 For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments, and his commandments are not grievous.

I. JOHN.

4 For whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world, and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith.

5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

6 This he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ, not by water only, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth.

7 For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood, and these three agree in one.

9 If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son.

10 He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the witness in himself. He that believeth not God, hath made him a liar, because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.

11 And this is the record, that God hath given us eternal life, and this life is in his Son.

12 He that hath the Son, hath life; and he that hath not the Son, hath not life.

13 These things have I written unto you that believe on the Name of the Son of God, that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe in the Name of the Son of God.

[con-
cerning]
him,

14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us.

15 And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sin a sin which is not unto death, he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not unto death. There is a sin unto death: I do not say that he shall pay for it.

17 All unrighteousness is sin, and there is a sin not unto death.

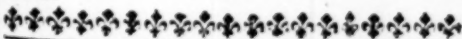
CHAP. I

18 We know that whosoever is born of God, sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickednesse.

20 And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath given us an understanding that we may know him that is true: and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life.

21 Little children keep your selves from idols. Amen.



¶ The second epistle of J O H N.

An exhortation to persevere in Christian love and belief, lest we lose the reward of our profession. 10 To avoid deceivers

He cleer unto the elect lady, and her children, whom I love in the truth: and not I onely, but also all they that have known the truth:

2 For the truths sake which dwell in us, and shall be with us for ever:

3 Grace be with you, mercy and peace from God the father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the father in truth and love.

4 I rejoiced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee: but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another.

6 And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, that as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it.

7 For many deceivers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist.

8 Look to your selves, that we lose not those things

III. JOHN,

¶ Or, things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son.

10 If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him, God speed.

11 For he that biddeth him, God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds.

12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink, but I trust to come unto you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be full.

13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.

~~~~~

¶ The third epistle of JOHN.

**1** Gaius commended for piety, **5** and hospitality **7** to true preachers. **9** Diotrephes dispraised for ambition. **12** The good report of Demetrius confirmed.

**¶ Or,** truly. **¶ pray.** **T**he elder unto the wellbeloved Gaius, whom I love in the truth:

**2** Behold, I write above all things, that thou mayest prosper, and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.

**3** For I rejoiced greatly when the brethren came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou walkest in the truth.

**4** I have no greater joy, then to hear that my children walk in truth.

**5** Behold thou doest faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren and to strangers:

**6** Which have been witnesses of thy charity before the church: who if thou bring forward on their journey after a godly sort, thou shalt do well:

**7** Because that for his Names sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gentiles.

**¶ Or,** worthy of God.

## JUDE.

8 We therefore ought to receive such, that we might be fellow-helpers to the truth.

9 I wrote unto the church, but Diotrephes, who loveth to have the preeminence among them, receiveth us not.

10 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his deeds which he doth, prating against us with malicious words: and not content therewith, neither doth he himself receive the brethren, and forbidderth them that would, and casteth them out of the church.

11 Beloved, follow not that which is evil, but that which is good. He that doth good, is of God: but he that doth evil, hath not seen God.

12 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and of the truth it self: yea, and we also bear record, and ye know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen write unto thee.

14 But I trust, I shall shortly see thee, and we shall speak face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

mouth to  
mouth.]

### ¶ The general epistle of JUDE.

5 An exhortation to constancy in faith. 14 Horrible punishment prepared for false teachers.  
20 The godly by prayer unto God, and by the assistance of the holy Ghost, grow in grace.

**J**ude the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James, to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and preserved in Jesus Christ, and called;

2 Mercy unto you, and peace, and love be multiplied.

3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation: it was needful for me to write unto you, and exhort you, that ye should earnestly contend for the faith which was once delivered unto the saints.

4 For there are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old ordained to this condemnation.

## JUDE.

tion. ungodly men, turning the grace of our God into lasciviousnesse, and denying the onely Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this, how that the Lord having saved the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward destroyed them that beleeveth not.

10.  
princ-  
palities.

6 And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness, unto the judgement of the great day.

16.  
other.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them, in like manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.

8 Likewise also these fleshly dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities.

\* Jerh.  
3. 2.

9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil, he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, \* The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brut beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.

11 Also unto them, for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core.

12 These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of windes: trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots:

13 Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame: wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blacknesse of darkness for ever.

14 And Enoch also the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints,

15 To execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed.

## CHAP. XII.

ted, and of all their hard speeches, which ungodly sinners have spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts: and their mouth speaketh great swelling words, having men as persons in admiration because of advantage.

17 But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ:

18 How that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.

19 These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the spirit.

20 But ye beloved, building up your selves on your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost,

21 Keep your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life.

22 And of some have compassion, making a difference.

23 And others save with fear, pulling them out of the fire: hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy,

25 To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory & majesty, dominion and power, now and ever. Amen.

~~~~~

¶ THE REVELATION OF

saint JOHN the Divine.

CHAP. I.

4 He writeth to the seven churches of Asia. 7 The coming of Christ. 17 His power and majesty.

IHE Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to passe; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John,

REVELATION.

2 Who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, and of all things which he saw.

3 Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

4 Unto the seven churches in Asia, grace be unto you and peace from him * which is, and which was, and which is to come, and from the seven spirits which are before his throne:

5 And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the * first-begotten of the dead, & the prince of the kings of the earth: unto him that loved us, * and washed us from our sins in his own blood,

6 And hath * made us kings and priests unto God and his Father: to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

7 * Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him: even so. Amen.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

9 I John, who also am your brother and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

10 I was in the Spirit on the Lords day, and heard behind me a great voice as of a trumpet,

11 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last: and tol a: thou seest write in a book, and send it unto the seven Churches which are in Asia, unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea.

12 And I turned to see the voice that spake with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks.

13 And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like unto the Son of man, clothed with a garment

* Exod.
3-14.

* 1 Cor.
15-21.

Col. 1-18

* Hebr.

9-14.

* 1 Pet.

2-5.

* Matth.

24-30.

CHAP. II.

and of ment docten to the foot, and girt about the paye
ings with a golden girdle.

14 His head & his haire were white like wool, as
white as snow, and his eyes were as a flame of fire,

15 And his feet like unto fine brasse, as if they
burned in a furnace: and his voice as the sound of
many waters.

16 And he had in his right hand seven stars: and
out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and
his countenance was as the sun shineth in his
strength.

17 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as
dead, and he laid his right hand upon me, saying
unto me, Fear not, I am the first, and the last.

18 I am he that liveth, and was dead: and be-
hold, I am alive for ever more, Amen, and have the
keys of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou hast seen and
the things which are, and the things which shall be
hereafter.

20 The mystery of the seven stars which thou
sawest in my right hand, and the seven golden can-
dlesticks. The seven stars are the angels of the se-
ven churches; and the seven Candlesticks which thou
sawest, are the seven churches.

CHAP. III.

What is to be written to the angels of the
churches of Ephesus, 8 Smyrna, 12 Pergamos,

18 Thyatira, and what is worthy praise, or dis-
praise in them.

Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus, write,
These things saith he that holdeth the seven
stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of
the seven golden candlesticks.

2 I know thy works, and thy laboure, and thy pa-
tience, and how thou canst not bear them which are
evil, and thou hast tried them which say they are a-
postles, and are not, and hast found them liars:

3 And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my
Names sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted.

4 Nevertheless, I have somewhat against thee,
because thou hast left thy first love.

And

5 Remember

REVELATION.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitans, which I also hate.

7 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches: To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

8 And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna, write, These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive:

9 I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, but thou art rich, & I know the blasphemy of them, which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried, and ye shall have tribulation ten dayes: be thou faithfull unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear, what the Spirit saith unto the churches. He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write, These things saith he who hath the sharp sword with two edges:

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satans seat is, and thou holdest fast my Name, and hast not denied my faith, even in the dayes wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of ^{* Balaam,} who taught Balac to cast a stumbling block befoze the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication.

15 So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth.

17 He

CHAP. II.

17 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches, To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it.

18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira, write, These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass :

19 I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works, and the last to be more than the first.

20 Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman * Jezebel, which teacheth her self a prophetesse, to teach, and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.

* 1 King.
15. 25.

21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication, and she repented not.

22 Behold I will call her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her, into great tribulation, except they repent of these deeds.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and all the churches shall know that * I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works.

* Jer. 17:
20. and
17. 10.

24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan as they speak, I will put upon you none other burden:

25 But that which ye have already, hold fast till I come.

26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations:

27 (* And he shall rule them with a rod of iron: as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers:) even as I received of my Father.

* psalm
29.

28 And I will give him the morning Star.

29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

REVELATION.

CHAP. III.

1 The angel of the church of Sardis reproveth
10 Of Philadelphia approved: 15 Of Laodicea rebuked. 20 Christ standeth at the door, and knocketh.

AND unto the angel of the church in Sardis, write, These things saith he that hath the seven spirits of God, and the seven stars. I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.

2 Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. * If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

* Thess.
5. 2.
2 Pet.
3. 12.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments, and they shall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment, and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name, before my father, and before his angels.

* Chap.
20. 12.
Phil. 4. 3.

6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia, write, These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth;

8 I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie: behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Because thou hast kept the word of my patience,

encl.

CHAP. III.

me, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly, hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the Name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new Name.

13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans, write, These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God.

12 in
Laodicea

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot. I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth:

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich and increased with goods, and have need of nothing: and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blinde and naked.

18 I counsel thee to buy of me gold tryed in the fire, that thou mayest be rich, and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakednesse do not appear, and against thine eyes with eye-salve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: * Prov. 3. 11. he zealous that he fore and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the doore and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the doore, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. H. 3. 12. 9

21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne.

22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

REVELATION.

CHAP. II. II.

2 John seeth the throne of God, 4 about which are four and twenty elders sitting, 10 Who lay down their crowns, and worship them that sit on the throne.

After this I looked, and behold, a door was opened in heaven: and the first voice which I heard, was as it were of a trumpet, talking with me, which said, Come up hither, and I will shew thee things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the spirit: and behold, a throne was set in heaven, and one sat on the throne.

3 And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper, and a sardin stone: and there was a rainbowe round about the throne, in sight like unto an emerald.

4 And round about the throne were four and twenty seats, and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

5 And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thundings, and voices: and there were seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven spirits of God.

6 And before the throne, there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behinde.

7 And the first beast was like a lion, and the second beast like a calf, and the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.

8 And the four beasts, had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, and they rest not day and night, saying, * Holy, holy, holy, Lord God almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

9 And when those beasts give glory, and honour, and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who liveth for ever and ever,

10 The four and twenty elders fall down before him that sat on the throne, and worship him

† 8.
they have
no rest.
* Isaiah.
6.3.

that

CHAP. V.

that lieth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns
before the throne, saying,

11 * Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory,
and honour, and power: for thou hast created all
things, and for thy pleasure they are & were created.

* Chap.
3.12.

CHAP. V.

The book with seven seals, & not to be opened
but by the lamb slain. 12 The elders praise
the lamb.

AND I saw in the right hand of him that sat
on the throne, a book written within, and on
the backside, sealed with seven seals.

2 And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a
loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and
to loose the seals thereof?

3 And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither un-
der the earth, was able to open the book, neither to
look thereon.

4 And I wept much, because no man was found
worthy to open, and to read the book, neither to look
thereon.

5 And one of the elders saith unto me, Weep
not: behold, * the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the
root of David, hath prevailed to open the book, and
to loose the seven seals thereof.

* Gen.
49.9.

6 And I beheld, and lo, in the midst of the
throne, and of the four beasts, and in the midst of the
others stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having
seven horns, and seven eyes, which are the seven spi-
rits of God, sent forth into all the earth.

7 And he came and took the book out of the
right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

8 And when he had taken the book, the four
beasts, and four and twenty elders fell down before
the Lamb, having every one of them harps, and
golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers
of saints.

1 Or,
incense.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art
worthy to take the book, and to open the seals there-
of: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God
by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and
people, and nation:

REVELATION.

* 2 Pet.
2.9.

10 * And hath made us unto our God kings and priests, and we shall reign on the earth.

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voice of many angels round about the throne, and the beasts, and the elders, and the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands.

12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lamb that was slain, to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

13 And every creature which is in heaven, and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, honour, glory & power be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the lamb for ever and ever.

14 And the four beasts said, Amen. And the four and twenty elders fell down, and worshipped him that liveth for ever and ever.

CHAP. VI.

1 The opening of the seals in order, and what followed thereupon, containing a prophecy to the worlds end.

AND I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts, saying, Come and see.

2 And I saw, and behold a white horse, and he that sat on him had a bow, and a crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.

3 And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword.

5 And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo, a black horse: and he that sat on him had a pair of ballances in his hand.

6 And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and

The word choenix signifieth a measure containing one wine quart, and the twelfth part of a quart.

the
hur
7
bea
8
his
low
then
two
the
9
unde
for
they
10
long
when
11
of th
rest
ban
as th
12
seal,
lan
beca
13
then
when
14
is
lan
15
men,
the n
them
16
in th
17
who

C H A P. VI.

three measures of barley for a penny, and let thou hurt not the oil and the wine.

7 And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come, & see.

8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was death, and hell followed with him: and power was given ^{90r. 20} unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with ^{him,} sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held.

10 And they cried with a loud voice, saying, Vengeance, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes were given unto every one of them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellow-servants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake, and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood.

13 And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, ^{90r.} as a fig-tree casteth her ^{green} untimely figs, ^{figs.} when she is shaken of a mighty wind.

14 * And the heaven departed as a scrole when it is rolled together, and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. ^{• Isaiah 34.4.}

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every freeman; hid themselves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains,

16 And said to the mountains and rocks, * Fall ^{• Luke 23.30.} upon us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the lamb:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand?

REVELATION.

CHAP. VII

The servants of God sealed. 4 The number of the tribes that were sealed. 9 An infinite number before the throne clad in white robes.

AND after these things, I saw four angels standing on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the winds should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

2 And I saw another angel ascending from the east, having the seal of the living God: and he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the sea.

2 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the servants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed, and there were sealed an hundred and fourty and four thousand, of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of the tribe of Juda were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Levi were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

6 After this I beheld, and lo a great multitude which no man could number, of all nations and kindreds, and people and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands:

10 And cried with a loud voice, saying, Salva-

tion

CHAP. VIII.

tion to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

11 And all the angels stood round about the throne, and about the elders, and the four beasts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might be unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

13 And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lamb, which is in the midst of the throne, shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters: and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

* Chap.
21.7.
* Isaiah
49.10.
* Isaiah
25.8.
Chap.
21.4.

CHAP. VIII.

1 At the opening of the seventh seal, 2 seven trumpets are given to seven angels, 13 and to another much incense to offer with the prayers of the saints.

AND when he had opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven about the space of half an hour.

2 And I saw the seven angels which stood before God, and to them were given seven trumpets.

3 And another angel came and stood at the altar, having a golden censer, and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints, upon the golden altar which was before the throne.

Jo. adds
it to the
prayer.

4 And the smoke of the incense which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angels hand.

R E V E L A T I O N.

5 And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voices, and thundings, and lightnings, and an earthquake:

6 And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

7 The first angel sounded, and there followed hail, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.

8 And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea, and the third part of the sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters:

11 And the name of the star is called Wormwood, and the third part of the waters became wormwood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth angel sounded, and the third part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon, and the third part of the stars, so as the third part of them was darkened; and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an angel flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Wo, wo, wo to the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the other voices of the trumpet of the three angels which are yet to sound.

C H A P. IX.

1 The fifth angel sounding, a star falleth from heaven, to whom is given the key of the bottomless pit. 2 He openeth the pit, 3 Locusts come forth.

AND the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit.

2 And he opened the bottomless pit, and there arose

C H A P. IX.

rose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace, and the sun, and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth, and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power.

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree: but onely those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five moneths, and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those dayes shall men seek death, and shall not finde it, and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.

7 And the shapes of the Locusts were like unto horses prepared unto battel: and on their heads were as it were crowns like gold, and their faces were as the faces of men.

8 And they had hair as the hair of women, and their teeth were as the teeth of lions.

9 And they had breastplates as it were breastplates of iron, and the sound of their wings was as the sound of charrets of many horses running to battel.

10 And they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their tails; and their power was to hurt men five moneths.

11 And they had a king over them, which is the angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.

*That is
to say, a
destroy-
er.*

12 One was ispast, and behold, there come two hoers more hereafter.

13 And the first angel sounded, and I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar, which is before God.

14 Saying to the first angel which had the trumpet, Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

15 And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared

REVELATION.

10. 12. prepared & for an hour, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeer, for to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of the army of the horsemen were two hundred thousand thousand: and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision. and them that sat on them, having breast-plates of fire, and of facine, and hymsione. and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lions, and out of their mouthes issued fire, and smoke, and hymsione.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and by the smoke, and by the hymsione which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tails: for their tails were like unto serpents, and had heads: and with them they do hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, * and idols of gold and silver, and brasse & stone, and of wood, which neither can see, nor hear, nor walk:

21 Neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

CHAP. X.

An angel appeareth with a book open: 6 he sweareth that there should be no more time.

9 John is commanded to eat the book.

AND I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow was upon his head. and his face was as it were the sun, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little book open: and he set his right foot upon the sea, and his left foot on the earth,

3 And cryed with a loud voice, as when a lion roareth: and when he had cryed, seven thunders uttered their voices.

4 And when the seven thunders had uttered their voices, I was about to write: and I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, & write them not.

5 And

* PGL.
115. 4. &
115. 15.

C H A P. XI.

5 And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea and upon the earth, lifted up his hand to heaven.

6 And swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven and the things that therein are, and the earth and the things that therein are, and the sea and the things which are therein, that there should be time no longer :

7 But in the dayes of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the myserie of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the prophets.

8 And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said, So, and take the little book which is open in the hand of the angel, which standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth.

9 And I went unto the angel, and said unto him, Give me the little book. and he said unto me, Take it, and eat it up, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honey.

^a Ezek.
v. 3. & 33

10 And I took the little book out of the angels hand, and ate it up, and it was in my mouth sweet as honey : and as soon as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said unto me, Thou must prophesie again before many peoples, and nations, and tongues, and kings.

C H A P. XI.

3 Two witnesses prophesie: 6 they have power to shut heaven from rain. 14 The second wo past.

AND there was given me a reed like unto a rod, and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar and them that worship therein.

2 But the court which is without the temple, leave out, and measure it not : for it is given unto the Gentiles, and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two moneths.

3 And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes clothed in sackcloth.

4 These are the two olive-trees, and the two candlesticks, standing before the God of the earth.

5 And

160. —
cast out.
100. I will
give un-
to my.
two wit-
nesses
that they
may pro-
phesie.
^a Zech. 4.
3. & 11. 14

REVELATION.

5 And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.

6 These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the dayes of their prophetic: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

7 And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomles pit, shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

8 And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations shall see their dead bodies three dayes and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves.

10 And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoyce over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another, because these two prophets tormented them that dwell on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an half, the spirit of life from God entered into them: and they stood upon their feet, and great fear fell upon them which saw them.

12 And they heard a great voice from heaven, saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the citie fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glorie to the God of heaven.

14 The second wo is past, and behold, the third wo cometh quickly.

15 And the seventh angel sounded, and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reign for ever & ever.

16 And

is there not counted time
for man when

46.
names of
men.

CHAP. XII.

16 And the four and twenty elders which sat before God on their seats, fell upon their faces, and worshipped God.

17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come; because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldst give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy Name, small and great, and shouldst destroy them which destroy the earth.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of his testament, and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

CHAP. XIII

1 A woman clothed with the sun, travelleth: 4 before whom the dragon standeth ready to devour her childe: 5 which is caught up unto God.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven, a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars.

2 And she being with childe, cried, travelling in birth, and pained to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heaven, and behold a great red Dragon, having seven heads, and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads.

4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them into the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman, which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her childe as soon as it was born.

5 And she brought forth a man childe, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her childe was caught up unto God, and to his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed

REVELATION.

feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes

7 And there was war in heaben, Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought, and his angels.

8 And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heaben.

9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

10 And I heard a loud voice, saying in heaben, Now is come saluation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony, and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12 Therefore rejoyce ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them: wo to the inhabitants of the earth, and of the sea: for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.

13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man-child.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might flee into the wilderness into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman: that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, & the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

CHAP. XIII.

CHAP. XIII.

- 1 A beast with seven heads riseth out of the sea,
- 2 To whom the dragon yeeldeth his power,
- 12 Another beast coming out of the earth,
- 17 Marketh all in their foreheads

AND I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads, the name of blasphemy.

10.
names.

2 And the beast which I saw, was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads as it were [†]wounded to death, and his deadly wound was healed; and all the world wondered after the beast.

† 6.
slain.

4 And they worshipped the dragon, which gave power unto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him?

5 And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things, and blasphemies, and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months.

10.
to make war.

6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his Name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb, slain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man have an ear, let him hear:

10 He that leadeth into captivity, shall go into captivity: * He that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience, and the faith of the saints.

* Matthe.
26.52.

11 And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And

REVELATION.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein, to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men,

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth, by the means of th^ese miracles, which he had power to do in the sight of the beast, saying to them that dwell on the earth that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

Or,
breath.

15 And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

Or,
to give.

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

17 And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Where is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is six hundred threescore and six.

CHAP. XIII

1 The Lamb with his company standeth on mount Sion. 6 An angel preacheth the gospel, 8 The fall of Babylon. 15 The harvest of the world

AND I looked, and lo, a Lamb stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred fourscore and four thousand, having his Fathers Name written in their foreheads,

2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers, harping with their harps:

3 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the el-

vers

CHAP. XIII.

vers, and no man could learn that song, but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 These are they which were not defiled with women: for they are virgins: These are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever he goeth: These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits unto God, and to the Lamb.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I saw another angel sit in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue and people.

7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgment is come: * and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters.

8 And there followed another angel, saying, * Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

9 And the third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast, and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand,

10 The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture, into the cup of his indignation, and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone, in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of the Lamb:

11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever. And they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.

12 Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

13 And I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Write, blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, from henceforth, yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their works.

REVELATION.

works he follow them.

14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in his hand a sharp sickle.

• Joel
3. 13.
3 Or,
drind.

15 And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud, * Thrust in thy sickle, and reap, for the time is come for thee to reap, for the harvest of the earth is ripe.

16 And he that sat on the cloud, thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another angel came out of the temple, which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle.

18 And another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire, and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great wine-press of the wrath of God.

20 And the wine-press was troden without the city, and blood came out of the wine-press, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs.

C H A P. XV.

1 The seven angels with the seven last plagues,

3 The song of them that overcome the beast.

7 The vials full of the wrath of God.

AND I saw another signe in heaven great and marvellous, seven angels having 7 seven last plagues, for in them is filled up the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glasse mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over his mark, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glasse, having the harps of God.

• Exod.
15. 1.
3 Psalm
135. 17.

3 * And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty, * just and true are thy ways, thou kings of saints.

4 * And

C H A P. XVI.

4 * Who shall not fear thee. O Lord, and glorify thee. Jer.
like thy Name? for thou only art holy: for all
nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy
judgements are made manifest.

5 And after that I looked, and behold, the tem-
ple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven was
opened:

6 And the seven angels came out of the temple,
having the seven plagues, clothed in pure and white
linen, and having their breasts girded with golden
girdles.

7 And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven
angels, seven golden vials, full of the wrath of
God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with smoke from
the glory of God, and from his power, and no man
was able to enter into the temple, till the seven
plagues of the seven angels were fulfilled.

C H A P. XVI.

1 The angels pour out their vials of wrath.
6 The plagues that follow thereupon. 15 Christ
cometh as a thief.

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple,
saying to the seven angels, Go your ways,
and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon
the earth.

2 And the first went, and poured out his vial
upon the earth, and there fell a noisom and grievous
sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast,
and upon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second angel poured out his vial upon
the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man:
and every living soul died in the sea.

4 And the third angel poured out his vial upon
the rivers and fountain of waters, and they be-
came blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters say,
Thou art righteous O Lord, which art, and wast,
and shalt be, because thou hast judged thus.

6 For they have shed the blood of saints, and
prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink:
for they are worthy.

7 And

REVELATION.

7 And I heard another out of the altar say, Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy judgements.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the sun and power was given unto him to scorch men with fire.

11 Or,
burned.

9 And men were || scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the Name of God, which hath power over these plagues: and they repented not to give him glory.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast, and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

11 And blasphemed the God of heaven, because of their pains, and their sores, and repented not of their doings.

12 And the sixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates, and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.

13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet.

14 For they are the spirits of devils working miracles, which go forth unto the kings of the earth, and of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.

* Matth.
24. 44.

15 * Behold, I come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.

16 And he gathered them together into a place, called in the Hebrew tongue, Armageddon.

17 And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air, and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne saying, It is done.

18 And there were voices, and thunders, and lightnings: and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.

19 And the great city was divided into three parts,

CHAP. XVII.

parts, and the cities of the nations fell: and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, * 10 Jer. 15. 1. unto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath.

20 And every island fled away, and the mountains were not found.

21 And there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent, and men blasphemed God, because of the plague of the hail: for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

1, 4 A woman arrayed in scarlet, with a golden cup in her hand, sitteth upon the beast, 5 which is Babylon. 8 The punishment of the whore. 14 The victory of the Lamb.

AND there came one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying unto me, Come hither, I will shew unto thee the judgement of the great whore that sitteth upon many waters:

1 With whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.

3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness: and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads, and ten horns.

4 And the woman was arrayed in purple, and scarlet colour, and decked with gold, & precious stone, & pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations, and filthinesse of her fornication.

5 And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

7 And the angel said unto me, Wherefore didst thou

Wb

thou

REVELATION.

thou marhest? I will tell thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seven heads, and ten horns,

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomlesse pit, & go into perdition. and they that dwell on the earth, shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold, the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here is the minde which hath wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth,

10 And there are seven kings, five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come: and when he cometh, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, & is not, even he is the eighth and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet: but receive power as kings one hour with the beast.

13 These have one minde, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast.

14 These shall make war with the lamb, and the lamb shall overcome them: * for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithful.

* 1 Tim.
6. 15.
chap.
13. 13.

15 And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten horns, which thou sawest upon the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her desolate, and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until the words of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

1 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to go out of her. 9 The kings of the earth lament for her.

CHAP. XVIII.

AND after these things, I saw another angel come down from heaven, having great power, and the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, * Babylon the great is fallen, & fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird: * Chap. 14.8.

3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, saying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues: 18.9.
power.

5 For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as she rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much she hath glorified her self, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she saith in her heart, I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow. * 17.18
47.8.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine, and she shall be utterly burnt with fire, for strong is the Lord God, who judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the earth, who have committed fornication, and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail her, and lament for her, when they shall see the smoke of her burning:

10 Standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying, Alas, alas, that great city Babylon, that mighty city: for in one hour is thy judgement come.

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her, for no man buyeth their merchandise any more.

12 The merchandise of gold and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple,

REVELATION.

¶ Or,
sweet.

and silk, and scarlet, and all thyne wood, and all manner vessels of woze, & all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brasse, and iron, and marble,

¶ Or,
bodies.

13 And cynamom, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beast, and sheep, and bezies, and charrets, and all slaves, and souls of men.

14 And the fruits that thy soul lusteth after, are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty, and goodly, are departed from thee, and thou shalt finde them no more at all.

15 The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off, for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,

16 And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linnen, & purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold and precious stones, and pearls:

17 For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every ship-master, and all the company in ships, and sailers, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off.

18 And cried, when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city?

19 And they cast dust on their heads, and cryed, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea, by reason of her costliness, for in one hour is she made desolate.

20 Rejoice over her, thou heaven, & ye holy apostles, & prophets, for God hath avenged you on her.

21 And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voice of harpers and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee: and the sound of a millstone shall be heard no more at all in thee:

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for the

mer.

CHAP. XIX.

merchants were the great men of the earth: for by thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

24 And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

CHAP. XIX.

1 God is praised in judging the whore, and avenging the blood of the saints. 7 The marriage of the Lamb.

AND after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia: salvation, and glory, and honoꝝ, and power unto the Lord our God:

2 For true and righteous are his judgements, for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

3 And again they said, Alleluia: and her smoke rose up for ever and ever.

4 And the four and twenty elders, and the four beasts fell down, and worshipped God that sat on the throne saying, Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thundings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let us be glad, and rejoice, and give honoꝝ to him: for the marriage of the lamb is come, and his wife hath made her self ready.

8 And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

9 And he saith unto me, Write, * Blessed are * *Mark.* they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him: and he said unto me, * See thou do it not: I am thy fellow-*chap.* servant, and of thy brethren, that have the testimo-

REVELATION.

ny of Iesus, worship God: for the testimony of Iesus is the spirit of prophecy.

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse, and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and true, and in righteousness he both judge and make war.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns, and he had a name written, that no man knew but he himself.

13 * And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood, and his name is called, The word of God.

* Isaiah
63.2.

14 And the armies which were in heaven, followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the wine-press of the fierceness and wrath of almighty God,

16 And he hath on his vesture, and on his thigh a name written, * KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

* Chap.
27.14.

17 And I saw an angel standing in the sun, and he cryed with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that flie in the midst of heaven, Come and gather you selves together unto the supper of the great God.

18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his army.

20 And the beast, was taken, and with him the false prophet, that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceives them which had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out

CHAP. XX.

out of his mouth : and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

CHAP. XX.

1 Satan bound for a thousand years 6 The first resurrection. 7 Satan let loose again, to be cast into the lake. 12 The last and general resurrection.

AND I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chain in his hand.

2 And he said hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the devil and Satan, and bound him a thousand yeers,

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand yeers should be fulfilled : and after that he must be loosed a little season :

4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgement was given unto them : and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands ; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand yeers.

5 But the rest of the dead lived not again untill the thousand yeers were finished. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection : on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand yeers.

7 And when the thousand yeers are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

8 And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, * Gog and * Ezech. 22. 2. & 39. 1. Bagog, to gather them together to battel : the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city : and fire came down from God out

REVELATION.

eat of heaven, and devoured them.

10 And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night, for ever and ever.

11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth, and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them.

* chap.
3-5.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God: and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

10.
grave.

13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it: and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death

15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

1 A new heaven and a new earth. 10 The heavenly Jerusalem 23 She needeth no sun. 14 The kings of the earth bring their riches unto her.

* Isaiah
65. 17.
2 Pet.
3. 13.

AND I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven, and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more sea.

2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, saying, Behold the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God.

* Chap.
7. 17.

4 * And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes: and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain, for the former things are passed away.

* 2 Cor.
5. 17.

5 And he that sat upon the throne, said, * Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me,

Write:

CHAP. XXI.

Write : for these words are true and faithful.

6 And he said unto me, It is done : * I am Alpha and Omega , the beginning and the end , * I will give unto him that is athirst, of the fountain of the water of life, freely.

* Chap.
1.8. and
22.12.
* 1 Cor. 12.

7 He that overcometh shall inherit all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all spars that have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone : which is the second death.

9 And there came unto me one of the seven angels, which had the seven vials, full of the seven last plagues and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Bride, the Lambs wife.

10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God,

11 Having the glory of God : and her light was like unto a stone most precious : even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal :

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the east three gates, on the north three gates, on the south three gates, and on the west three gates.

14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me, had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth : and he measured the city with a reed, twelve thousand furlongs : the length, and the breadth, and the height of it are equal.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure

REVELATION.

sure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Jasper, and the citie was pure gold, like unto clear glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all manner of precious stones, The first foundation was Jasper, the second Saphire, the third a Chalcedonie, the fourth an emerald.

20 The fifth Sardionir, the sixth Sardius, the seventh chrysolite, the eighth beryl, the ninth a topas, the tenth a chrysolopasus, the eleventh a facinet, the twelfth an amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearle, every severall gate was of one pearle, and the street of the citie was pure gold, as it were transparent glasse.

22 And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God almighty, and the Lamb are the temple of it.

* Isaiah
60. 19.

23 * And the citie had no need of the sun, neither of the moon to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof.

* Isaiah
60. 3.

24 * And the nations of them which are saved, shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

* Isaiah
60. 11.

25 * And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lambs book of life.

CHAP. XXII.

I The river of the water of life. 5 The light of the citie of God is himself. 18 Nothing may be added to the word of God, nor take therefrom.

And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crysfall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lamb.

2 In the midst of the street of it, and of either

C H A P. XXII.

the of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelue manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every moneth; and the leaues of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lamb shall be in it, and his ser-
uants shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face, and his Name shall be in their foreheads.

5 * And there shall be no night the e, and they need no candle, neither light of the sun: for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign
for ever and ever. * Chap. 21. 23.

6 And he said unto me, These sayings are faith-
ful and true. And the Lord God of the holy pro-
phets sent his anael to shew unto his servants the
things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that
keepeth the sayings of the prophecie of this book.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard them.
And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to
worship, before the feet of the angel, which shewed
me these things.

9 Then saith he unto me, * See thou do it not:
for I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren
the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of
this book: worship God. * Chap. 19. 10.

10 And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings
of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is unjust, let him be unjust still, and
he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that
is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that
is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickly, and my reward
is with me, * to give every man according as his
work shall be. * Rom. 2. 5.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, * the beginning
and the end, the first and the last. * Isai. 44. 4-5.

14 Blessed are they that do his commandments
that they may have right to the tree of life, and may
enter in through the gates into the city.

15 For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and
whore-
s

REVELATION.

whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. * And let him that is athirst, come. And whosoever will let him take the water of life freely.

Isaiah
5.1.

* Deut.
4.2.
Prov.
10.6.

18 For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, * If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book.

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

20 He which testifieth these things, saith, Surely, I come quickly. Amen. Even so, Come Lord Jesus,

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

FINIS.

ers, an

the an

not an

mo

Com

let hi

let hi

eth t

ay ma

e un

h.

om t

all tal

t of t

tem

Sum

e Lo

de wi